



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



279.1  
7228



LELAND STANFORD JUNIOR UNIVERSITY









EL SAGUARO

**HISTORY**  
**OF**  
**ARIZONA**

**BY**  
**THOMAS EDWIN FARISH,**  
**ARIZONA HISTORIAN**

**VOLUME VI**

**PHOENIX, ARIZONA**

**1918**





EL SAGUARO

**HISTORY**  
**OF**  
**ARIZONA**

**BY**  
**THOMAS EDWIN FARISH,**  
**ARIZONA HISTORIAN**

**VOLUME VI**

**PHOENIX, ARIZONA**

**1918**



COPYRIGHTED 1918,  
BY  
THOS. EDWIN FARISH,  
ARIZONA HISTORIAN

255413

YBA 9811 0807MAY2

THE FILMER BROTHERS ELECTROTYPE COMPANY  
TYPOGRAPHERS AND STEREOTYPERS  
SAN FRANCISCO

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

SAGUARO .....	Frontispiece
ANCIENT CANALS AND RUINS.....	Fronting Page 29
ADAMSVILLE .....	Fronting Page 46
ANCIENT CANALS.....	Fronting Page 70
CHARLES TRUMBULL HAYDEN.....	Fronting Page 103
EDWARD IRVINE.....	Fronting Page 187
JOHN J. GARDINER.....	Fronting Page 190
GOLDMAN BROS. ....	Fronting Page 203
MISS CARRIE G. HANCOCK.....	Fronting Page 253
COLUMBUS H. GRAY.....	Fronting Page 254
MRS. MARY A. GRAY.....	Fronting Page 259
CAPT. WM. A. HANCOCK.....	Fronting Page 270
JOHN T. ALSAP.....	Fronting Page 271
SIMON NOVINGER.....	Fronting Page 273
J. LORENZO HUBBELL.....	Fronting Page 281
J. G. H. COLTER.....	Fronting Page 293



# CONTENTS.

## VOLUME VI.

### CHAPTER I.

#### CONDITIONS IN 1867 AND 1868.

PAGE

General James E. Rusling's Description of Arizona—Freight Rates—General Rusling's Party Joined by Governor and Mrs. McCormick—Abundance of Mesquite—The Gila Valley—Painted Rocks—Giant Saguaro—Maricopa Wells—Pima and Maricopa Indians—Montezuma—Tucson—San Xavier del Bac—Heavy Rains—Overflowing of the Gila River—Crossing the Gila and Salt Rivers—Dangers and Difficulties Experienced in Hassayampa River—Wickenburg—The Vulture Mine .....	1
---	---

### CHAPTER II.

#### CONDITIONS IN 1867 AND 1868 (Continued).

General Rusling's Description Continued—Skull Valley—Barrenness of Country—Ancient Ruins and Acequias—Possibilities of Gila and Salt River Valleys—Prescott—Indians—Thefts and Raids by Apaches—Point of Rocks—Fort Whipple—Williamson Valley—Hardyville—Mohave, Wallapai, Pah-Ute and Other Hostile Indian Tribes—Indian Department Blunders—Fort Mohave—W. H. Hardy—General Summing Up—Pete Kitchen's Description of Trip to Sonora.....	27
--	----

### CHAPTER III.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

Along the Gila River: Adamsville and Florence—Charles Adams, Founder of Adamsville—Name Changed to Sanford—William Dumont First Postmaster—Resentment Against Change—Richard Bros. and Their Flouring Mills—Reputed That Levi Ruggles Built First House in Florence—Dispute of Authorities Over Same—Charles G. Mason, First Settler in Florence—Joseph Collingwood Opens First Store—Description of Ruggles' Residence—Irrigating Canals in and Around Florence—Pat Holland—Pioneers—First Catholic Church in Central Arizona—Florence Named by Governor	
---	--

	PAGE
McCormick in Honor of His Wife—Discovery of Silver King Mine—Fight With, and Defeat of, Apaches—Primrose Hill, Known as "Poston's Folly"—Maricopa Wells—Pre-emption of by John B. Allen—Morgan's Ferry—Mrs. Clifford's Description of "Montezuma's Face"—Maricopa Charley's Ridiculous Purchases.....	45

## CHAPTER IV.

## SETTLEMENT OF THE SALT RIVER VALLEY.

Description of Valley—Ancient Ruins and Canals—Advent of Swilling Party—Organization of Swilling Irrigating Canal Company—Taking Out of Canals and Placing Land Under Cultivation—Biography of "Darrell Duppa" Who Named Phoenix—Description of Duppa's Agua Fria Station—Killing of James Nelson by "Jim" Smith—John Larsen—Thomas J. L. Hoague—Frank Metzler—Jacob Densling—Tom McGoldrick—Other Early Settlers—Early Water Claims: "The Phoenix Ditch Company"—"Salt River Ditch Company"—"Prescott Ditch Company"—"Hayden Milling and Farming Ditch Company"—"Virginia Farming Ditch Company"—"Salt River Farming Ditch Company"—"Monterey Ditch Company"—Those Who Followed the Swilling Party—First Flouring Mills in the Salt River Valley....	69
---	----

## CHAPTER V.

## EARLY SETTLEMENTS—PHOENIX AND VICINITY.

Location of Phoenix Townsite—East Phoenix—First County Election—West Phoenix Chosen—Early Settlers—Sale of Town Lots—Hayden's Ferry, Now Tempe—Charles Trumbull Hayden's Experience as First Probate Judge in Tucson—Winchester Miller—His Experiences With Indians and Renegades—History of Tempe—Early Settlers—James T. Priest—Niels Peterson—Naming of Phoenix and Tempe—Story by Maj. Ben. C. Truman—Estimate of Arable Land in Territory—Land Under Cultivation—Maize and Wheat Raised in 1867—Prices Paid by Government for Produce..	99
--	----

## CHAPTER VI.

## EARLY SETTLEMENTS—PHOENIX AND VICINITY (Continued).

Mill City or East Phoenix—Hellings' Mill—The Swilling Farm—Sixth Territorial Legislature Creates County of Maricopa—Officials Appointed by Governor Safford—First District Court of Maricopa County Held by Judge Tweed.....	119
--	-----

## CONTENTS.

vii

### CHAPTER VII.

#### PROGRESS OF SALT RIVER VALLEY.

PAGE

Agricultural Area Increasing—First Harvesting Machinery Brought in by "Crete" Bryan and W. J. Mulholland—Many Varieties of Grain, Fruit and Vegetables Grown—Acreage Cultivated—Pima and Maricopa Indians Afford Protection to Farmers Against Apaches—Value of Products—Taxable Property—Cost of Clearing Land—Cost of Cultivation—Irrigating Canals in 1872—Acreage Under Irrigation—Summary of Irrigating Conditions in Salt River Valley.....	137
---	-----

### CHAPTER VIII.

#### PHOENIX AND SALT RIVER VALLEY.

Phoenix Located and Sale of Town Lots—Salt River Valley Association Formed—Members of—Survey of Town of Phoenix—First Building in Phoenix Erected by Captain Hancock—Other Buildings—First County Court House—William Smith, First Merchant in Phoenix—Other Early Merchants—Rise and Decline of Richard Bros.—Description of Phoenix in 1871—Business Conditions in Phoenix in 1872—Town Commission Formed .....	158
---	-----

### CHAPTER IX.

#### EARLY HISTORY OF PHOENIX.

Stores—Hotels—Fourth of July Celebration—Thanksgiving Day—Biography of J. J. Gardiner—Builder of First Planing Mill, Also City Hall, Valley Bank Building, etc.—Saloons—Brewery—Matt Caveness, Biography—Barber Shop—Physicians and Drug Stores—Butcher Shop—Other Businesses—Anecdote of Wormser—Corrals—First Large Well in Phoenix—Biography of J. D. Monihon—The Goldman Brothers—H. Morgan & Co.,—Number of Saloons—Dance Houses—Gambling Places—The Goldwater Brothers—Grand Ball—Marriage of Charles H. Kenyon and Miss Moore—Dr. W. W. Jones, Joe and Mike Goldwater Attacked by Indians, Joe Goldwater Wounded—Joe Goldwater First Postmaster of Ehrenberg .....	186
---	-----

### CHAPTER X.

#### EARLY HISTORY OF PHOENIX (Continued).

First Lawyers—First Chinese—First Bakery—First Restaurant—First Carriage Factory—First Sugar Cane Machinery—First Apiary—First Milkman—First Photographer—First Assayer—Newspaper Correspondents—Freighters—Richard & Company's Flouring Mill—Destruction of by Fire—Hayden's	
---	--



	PAGE
Mill at Tempe—John M. Olvany, First Postmaster of Phoenix—Other Postmasters—First American Couple Married in Phoenix—General Earl D. Thomas's Reminiscences of Phoenix—First White Child Born in Phoenix—Dispute Over Who Was—First American Death in Phoenix—First Building Brick and First Brick Building—Scarcity of Lumber—First Masonic Lodge in Territory—First Masonic Lodge in Phoenix—First Odd Fellows Lodge in Phoenix.....	213

## CHAPTER XI.

## SALT RIVER VALLEY PROGRESS; CHURCHES AND SCHOOLS.

Flouring Mills—Crops—Maryville—Early Churches and Ministers—Rev. Alexander Groves—Rev. Franklin McKean—Description of Old Time Religious Services—Edward Irvine Describes Meeting With Pastor Groves—Question of Sunday Labor—Quarterly Conference of Methodist Episcopal Church South, at Phoenix—First Church Conference in Valley—First Catholic Padre—Rev. Charles H. Cook, Missionary to Pimas—Sixth Territorial Legislature Passes Law for Establishment of Public Schools—Public School Opened in Phoenix—Building of School House—Hayden's Ferry School—Christmas Tree for School Children—Miss Caroline G. Hancock, Pioneer Teacher, Biography of.....	228
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

## SALT RIVER VALLEY PROGRESS (Continued).

Narrative of Mrs. Mary A. Gray, First White Woman in Valley—Darrell Duppa—Thomas Thompson Hunter Brings in First Herd of Cattle—Reminiscences—Early Settlers—Descriptions of Pima and Maricopa Squaws Gathering Wood—Alfileria Flats—Caterpillars—Biography of Thomas Thompson Hunter—More Early Settlers—Later Visit—Notes Domestication of Indians—Early Marriages in Valley—Captain William A. Hancock, Biography—Hon. John T. Alsap, Biography—Simon Novinger, Biography.....	254
---	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

## MORE SETTLEMENTS.

Immigration Impeded by Indian Troubles and Other Difficulties—C. E. Cooley, A. F. Banta and Henry W. Dodd Hunt Lost Mine—Biography of C. E. Cooley—Biography of Henry W. Dodd—Town of St. Johns Located—Biography of Sol Barth—Location in Round Valley by William B. Milligan—Starting of Springerville—Location and Naming of Show Low—First Location of Holbrook—Location on Silver Creek,
---

## CONTENTS.

ix

	PAGE
Now Snowflake—Biography of James Stinson—Biography of Daniel H. Ming—Interview With J. Lorenzo Hubbell—Fights with Outlaws and Rustlers—Reminiscences by Prof. E. C. Bunch—Growth of Cattle Industry—"Briefs"—Outlaws .....	274

### CHAPTER XIV.

#### MORE SETTLEMENTS (Continued).

Interview with James G. H. Colter—Settles in Round Valley—Locates at Nutrioso—Indian Troubles—Induces Henry Springer to Locate in Valley and Names Springerville After Him—Experiences as Deputy Sheriff—Fight With Jack Olney—Sells Out Nutrioso to Mormons—Fight With Geronimo and Victorio—Fred T. Colter in Fight.....	293
--	-----

### CHAPTER XV.

#### SURVEYING LAND IN TERRITORY.

John Wasson Appointed Surveyor-General—Biography of—His Account of Conditions in Arizona in 1871—Surveys Made in Santa Cruz and Gila Valleys and in Vicinity of Prescott—Spanish and Mexican Land Claims—Mining—Expedition by Governor Safford—Timber, Agriculture and Grazing.....	308
---	-----



**HISTORY OF ARIZONA.**  
**VOLUME VI.**



# HISTORY OF ARIZONA.

---

## CHAPTER I.

CONDITIONS IN 1867 AND 1868.

GENERAL JAMES E. RUSLING'S DESCRIPTION OF ARIZONA—FREIGHT RATES—GENERAL RUSLING'S PARTY JOINED BY GOVERNOR AND MRS. MCCORMICK—ABUNDANCE OF MESQUITE—THE GILA VALLEY—PAINTED ROCKS—GIANT SAGUARO—MARICOPA WELLS—PIMA AND MARICOPA INDIANS—MONTEZUMA—TUCSON—SAN XAVIER DEL BAC—HEAVY RAINS—OVERFLOWING OF THE GILA RIVER—CROSSING THE GILA AND SALT RIVERS—FORT McDOWELL—HARD ROAD TO PRESCOTT—AGUA FRIA RIVER—DANGERS AND DIFFICULTIES EXPERIENCED IN HASSAYAMPA RIVER—WICKENBURG—THE VULTURE MINE.

In 1867 and 1868, the conditions in Arizona were in all respects bad. The Apaches and the River Indians above Fort Yuma were all on the warpath, besides which, the uncertainty of transportation and excessive cost, with the dangers to life attending the hardy adventurer, made Arizona at that time anything but a desirable place of residence.

In the spring of 1867 General James E. Rusling, as agent of the War Department to inspect the posts of Arizona, accompanied by Ben C. Truman, came into Arizona, and General Rus-

ling, in a book printed subsequently, entitled: "The Great West and the Pacific Coast," describes the conditions existing in Arizona at that time, from which I condense the following:

Their trip from Wilmington to Yuma, then Arizona City, was one of hardship and not of interest to us at this time. Freight was shipped from San Francisco to the mouth of the Colorado River at that time in sail boats, from which point it was transferred into small river steamers for transportation up the river. Oftentimes on account of the uncertainty of the river channel, to reach Yuma involved a trip of two months. The rates current then, according to General Rusling, were, from the mouth of the Colorado to Yuma (or Arizona City), 150 miles, twenty dollars a ton in coin; to La Paz, 300 miles, forty dollars a ton in coin; to Fort Mohave, or Hardyville, 450 miles, sixty dollars a ton in coin. The rates from San Francisco to the mouth of the river, some 2,000 miles, were from twelve to fifteen dollars per ton, coin, so that every load of freight landed at Arizona City or Hardyville, cost from thirty-five to seventy-five dollars a ton for transportation alone, to which should be added five dollars a pound in gold for each one hundred miles into the interior, which made freight cost delivered in Tucson about \$250 a ton in gold, and in Prescott about the same, which, in itself, was ruinous to any mining enterprise, and, in fact, to any enterprise whatever. Even at these exorbitant rates it is doubtful whether the freighters amassed any great amount of money for frequently their trains were captured and


the contents of the wagons destroyed. No freighter at that time but suffered more or less on that account, and the merchants in the different localities also incurred great losses. These conditions made Arizona practically inaccessible to population and trade, and gave rise to an earnest desire on the part of her citizens that a port should be opened at Libertad on the Gulf of California where supplies could be hauled into the Territory at a saving estimated at the time of over \$200,000 per annum.

General Rusling and his party arrived in Yuma on the 2nd of March, and after inspecting the post there, were joined by Governor McCormick and his wife, they having left San Francisco in advance of Rusling's party, and on March 4th they continued their journey to Prescott over a road which was difficult and dangerous. Their outfit consisted of two four mule ambulances, into which they stored themselves, their baggage, rations, forage, cooking utensils, etc., with two wagon sheets to pitch as tents if necessary. These, however, they did not use except for making their beds. General Rusling declares the climate was simply unrivalled. There was no cavalry at Yuma, and the road being reported comparatively safe to Maricopa Wells, they went thither without escort, depending upon their own courage and vigilance. Nevertheless, they provided themselves before starting with firearms, giving to the cook whom they took along to provide their meals, and to both drivers, Springfield muskets, while they themselves were equipped



with a Spencer or Remington rifle apiece, as well as revolvers.

Their road, for the most part, ran along the side of the Gila river, which was swollen at that time on account of the melting snows of spring, and over the desert sands. Portions of the Gila bottoms, he claims, were fine agricultural land, but required irrigation. They found but few settlers along the route and nothing but here and there an abortive attempt at cultivation, usually unsuccessful. The bottoms everywhere were covered with bunch grass and mesquite-timber—"the one the delight of horses, the other invaluable in that treeless region. The mesquite has but little height; but its trunk is often two and three feet in diameter, though only about as many high, from which point it throws out great, sturdy, black, gnarled limbs for a distance of thirty or forty feet all around. We saw many of them, that I think could not have been more than five or six feet in height, the bend of the branches included; nevertheless, with their crooked and gnarled limbs, they sprawled over the ground for a diameter of fully seventy-five or one hundred feet. At first they strike you as dwarfs, puny in aspect and purpose; but afterwards, as stunted giants, massive in strength and power, writhing in very anguish, because unable to tower higher. For lumber purposes, the mesquite amounts to but little; but for fuel, it is invaluable, and the future settlers on the Gila will prize it highly. It occurs pretty much all through Arizona on the best river-bottoms, and everywhere seems a pro-



vidential institution. It makes a firewood scarcely inferior to oak or hickory, and bears a bean besides, which constitutes a large part of the subsistence of the Mexicans and the Indians there. These mesquite beans make a very sweet and palatable dish, and horses, mules, cattle, etc., are especially fond of them. The Mexicans we met en route to California, were subsisting upon them almost entirely, and subsequently in wandering through the Pima village, we found them in every storehouse. A Pima belle, for a bundle of cigarritos, cooked us a dish of them, and we have eaten worse things in New York and Washington. Said an old Arizonan one day, 'Whenever you see mesquites, strangers, look out for good land, you bet!' and we found it so invariably. Indeed, with a moderate amount of enterprise, and a small amount of capital, we saw no good reason why the valley of the Gila should not eventually be dotted with excellent farms. The land is all there, and plenty of water to irrigate it (if only the Gila can be subdued, and surely it can), and the climate the year round must be delightful. But, as a rule, we found the country desolate and forsaken, with the exception of a starving ranch here and there, whose dirty and dilapidated proprietor cared more to swear at his snarling half-coyote dogs, and sell an occasional glass of mescal or whisky, than to do an honest, hard day's work."

At Gila Bend, they were informed at Yuma, they would find Apaches if anywhere. They took the precaution to dismount from their ambulances and skirmish through on foot. As a

consequence, they were not molested. This experience was repeated all the way to Tucson, and by exercising prudent vigilance by day, and a few simple precautions by night, they made the journey through in safety. Continuing his story, the general says:

"A few miles west of Gila Bend, between Berk's Station and Oatman's Flat, we passed a group of rocks that interest everybody, but which nobody seemed to know much about. They stand near the roadside, and consist of smooth, red porphyry, or some such stone, curiously carved with figures of men, birds, beasts, fishes, etc. Many of the figures are now quite indistinct but sufficient remain to show what they were, and their very indistinctness—coupled with the hardness of the stone—proves their great antiquity. The rocks themselves, when struck, ring like genuine clink stones; and, it would seem, only the sharpest and hardest instruments could make much impression on them. The place is called 'Painted Rocks,' and we only had time for a cursory examination; but the sculpturing seemed too remote for Spanish times, and was generally attributed to the days of the Aztecs. However this may be, they appeared to be there as a species of hieroglyphics, and doubtless have a story to tell, that some future Champollion may unfold. It may be that the ancient travel for Mexico left the Gila here, or about here, and struck across the country for the Santa Cruz and so south, flanking the Maricopa Desert, and that these sculptured rocks record the place as the starting point—as a sort of finger-board or mile-

stone. This is only a conjecture; but here, at least, is work for the archaeologist and antiquarian, as well as at so many other points in Arizona."

Aside from the mesquite, ironwood and palo verde trees, scattered here and there along the Gila and its bottom, the entire country from Yuma to Tucson was treeless. Sagebrush and greasewood abounded as throughout the great internal basin of the continent generally. On the uplands were to be found the saguaro, or giant cactus, in full vigor and maturity, increasing in height and bulk until when they reached the Maricopa Desert they were to be found thirty to forty feet in height, by two or three feet in diameter, with perpendicular branches half way up, nearly half as large as the main stem. General Rusling says:

"This variety is a green fluted column, with its edges armed with semi-circular thorns, and bears a cluster of apples on top, from which the Indians extract a rude molasses or sugar. (This fruit was also highly prized by the Mexicans.) Inside, it is a frame work of reedy poles that serve many useful purposes in that woodless region. These immense cacti dot the country over to Tucson, and beyond—indeed, down to Mexico, and largely through it—and are a leading feature of southern Arizona. \* \* \* How such a gigantic vegetable or immense plant can thus flourish here, where nothing else comparatively will grow, is a continuing mystery and perpetual astonishment. It would seem more fit for a luxuriant soil and a tropical

climate. Yet here it is, *magnum opus*, mocking the naturalist apparently to scorn."

At Maricopa Wells they entered the Pima and Maricopa reservation. The reservation was described as some twenty-five miles long by four or five miles wide, embracing both sides of the Gila, and in it were twelve different villages, two of them occupied by Maricopas and the rest by the Pimas.

"Both tribes are a healthy, athletic, vigorous-looking people, and they were decidedly the most well-to-do aborigines we had yet seen. Unlike most Indians elsewhere, these two tribes are steadily on the increase; and this is not to be wondered at, when one sees how they have abandoned a vagabond condition, and settled down to regular farming and grazing. They have constructed great acequias up and down the Gila, and by means of these take out and carry water for irrigating purposes, over thousands of acres of as fine land as anybody owns. Their fields are well fenced with willows, they had been scratched a little with rude plows, and already (March 9th) they were green with the fast springing wheat and barley. In addition, they raise corn, beans, melons, etc., and have horses and cattle in considerable numbers. One drove of their livestock, over two thousand head, passed down the road just ahead of us, subsequently when en route to Tucson, and we were told they had many more. The year before these Indians had raised and sold a surplus of wheat and corn, amounting to two millions of pounds, besides a large surplus of barley, beans, etc. The most of this was bought by Indian

traders, located at Maricopa Wells, and Pima Villages, at from one to two cents per pound, coin, in trade; and then resold to the government, for the use of the troops in Arizona, at from six to seven cents per pound, coin, in cash. This is a specimen of the way in which the old Indian Ring fleeced both the Indians and the government, and I give it as a passing argument in favor of the new policy. These Indians, it appears, have practiced agriculture somewhat from time immemorial, and they should be encouraged in it, as there is no surer way of 'pacifying' or civilizing them. During the Rebellion they furnished two companies to the Union volunteers in Arizona, and the most of these had just re-enlisted, to serve as scouts against the Apaches. These wore a mongrel uniform, half Indian, half soldier; but the rest, only the traditional breechclout."

The general evidently refers to the two companies of Indians who composed a part of the Arizona volunteers for the subjugation of the Apaches, of which we have treated in a preceding volume.

"Their wigwams are oval shaped, wicker work lodges, made of poles, thatched with willows and straw, and this in turn overlaid with earth. An inverted washbowl, on an exaggerated scale, would not be a bad representation of one of them. They are usually five or six feet high in the centre, by fifteen or twenty in diameter, and would be very comfortable dwellings were it not for their absurd doors. These are only about thirty inches high, by perhaps twenty wide, and consequently the only mode

of entrance is on your hands and knees. While halting at the Pima villages for a day, we managed to crawl into one, for the sake of the experience; but the smoke and dirt soon drove us out. There was a dull fire in the centre, but with no means of exit for the smoke, except the low doorway. Rush or willow mats covered the rest of the floor, and on these three or four Pimas lay snoozing, wrapped in hides and blankets. Various articles of rude pottery, made by themselves, were stowed away under the eaves of the roof; and at the further side, suspended from a roofpole in a primitive cradle, was a pretty papoose sound asleep. As we crawled in, the venerable head of the family, raising himself on his elbow, saluted us with:

“‘Ugh! White man?’

“To which we, in true Arizona dialect, responded:

“‘How! Buenos dias, Senor!’

“His dignified and elegant answer was:

“‘Heap good! Bacco? Matches?’

“We gave him some of each, and shook hands all round, when the aged aborigine was pleased to add:

“‘Pimas! Americanos! Much friends! *Mui Mucho!*’

“These Indians had long been quiet and peaceable, and it would seem are already on the road to civilization. What they need is school-houses and religious teachers. They had an agent, an ex-officer of volunteers, who seemed honest and capable. But his hands were tied as to many essential things, and as a rule he was powerless for good. The Indian Bureau, with

its then accustomed wisdom, continued to send him fishing lines and fish hooks, although there was not a palatable fish in the Gila—I suppose because the Indians formerly on the Ohio and the Mississippi needed them; but persistently refused him carts and wagons, although these were constantly called for to enable him to haul their crops and fuel. As it was, we found the poor squaws gathering their scanty fuel as best they could—often miles away—and lugging it home to their villages on their backs and heads from far and near. A single cart or wagon to a village would be invaluable to these poor creatures, and would do more to ameliorate their condition than a carload of fish hooks, or a cargo of trinkets and blankets. Religiously their ideas seemed confused and vague, except that they believed, in a general way, in some sort of a supreme being, whom they call Montezuma. On the mountains to the west of them, clear-cut against their azure sky, is a gigantic profile, which they claim is Montezuma asleep. It bears, indeed, a striking resemblance to our own Washington, and is a marked feature of the landscape for many miles.”

The trip from thence to Tucson, nearly a hundred miles, was traveled over a good road, but there was a want of water everywhere. Frequently our travelers went from twenty to thirty miles before reaching a stream or spring. In the early days of Arizona there was less population on that road than on the Gila until they struck the Santa Cruz near Tucson, where ranches again thickened up and flocks and herds on a moderate scale were not infrequent.



The weather was beautiful all the way down and their ride was a delightful one. They heard of Apaches at one or two points, but it was always a fortnight before, or several miles ahead, and they went through unmolested.

The Tucsonians had heard of their coming and had, according to custom, held a town meeting, in which an organization was made to give them a grand reception. A band of string instruments was arranged for, and an orator was chosen for the occasion, but before the committee completed its arrangements, our travelers entered the Old Pueblo with their jaded teams, much to the disgust of the old settlers who proposed to make it a kind of a holiday or general fiesta, with a procession and accompaniments.

General Rusling says:

"Tucson we found to be a sleepy old town, of a thousand or so inhabitants, that appeared to be trying its best to take things easy, and succeeds in doing so. \* \* \*

"The town itself is built wholly of adobe, in thorough Mexican or Spanish style, and its population fluctuated. During the rule of Maximilian in Mexico, there was a considerable influx of Liberals here from Sonora, so that the town at one time numbered perhaps fifteen hundred souls. But with his 'taking off,' and the rise again of Juarez, many had returned thither; so that the population was then only about a thousand or so, as above stated, of whom fully two-thirds or more were Mexicans, originally or by descent. Its streets are unpaved, and all slope to the middle as a common sewer, as in Spain. It boasted several saloons, one rather

imposing, and some good stores; but had no bank, newspaper, schoolhouse, or church, except a rude adobe structure, where a Mexican padre officiated on Sunday to a small audience, with much array of lights, images, drums and violins, and afterwards presided at the customary cockfight. As specimens of ruling prices, grain (barley and wheat) sold at \$3 per bushel, hay at \$40 per ton, lumber at \$250 per thousand, all coin, and other things in proportion. The lumber came from the Santa Rita Mountains, fifty miles away, and was poor and scarce at that.

“The basis of Tucson’s existence, it appears, is the little Santa Cruz river, which flows along just at the edge of town, and irrigates some hundreds of surrounding acres, green just then (March 13th–18th), with wheat, barley, oats, etc. There is a good breadth of fine land here, and near here, and the river ought to be made to irrigate the whole valley. No doubt with proper husbanding and utilizing of the little stream, thousands of acres might be cultivated, and the whole region, both above and below Tucson, be made to produce largely. Peach trees were in bloom down by the river side when we were there; the grape, the orange, and the olive appeared in many gardens; and both climate and soil seemed all the most fastidious could wish. But Tucson lacks energy and capital, and besides, it seemed, the Apaches claim original, and pretty much undisputed, jurisdiction over most of the country there. Merchants complained that the Apaches raided on their teams and trains en route, and ranchmen, that the wily

rascals levied contributions regularly on their livestock, as soon as it was worth anything, and did not hesitate to scalp and kill, as well as steal, if it came in their way. Farming or grazing under such circumstances, it must be conceded, could hardly be called very lucrative or enticing, and the Tucsonians are entitled to the benefit of this explanation.

"The liveliest and most energetic things, however, that we saw about Tucson were its innumerable blackbirds, that thronged the few trees about the street, and awoke us every morning with their multitudinous twittering and chattering. How those birds did chatter and sing, from daylight well on into the morning; and what a relief they were to the dull and prosy old town! The men and women, wrapped in their serapes or blankets, sunned themselves by the hour in the doorways. The dogs and cats, the goats and pigs, slept on in the streets, or strolled lazily about at will. But these plucky birds sung on and on, with all the heartiness and abandon of the robin or mocking bird in the East; and Tucson should emulate their intrepidity and zeal. She should shake off somewhat of the spirit of Rip van Winkle, and remember she is under Yankee Government now, and in the latter half of the nineteenth century."

Evidently Tucson did wake up, for when the capital was moved there about a year after this writing, she began to put on cosmopolitan airs. Large mercantile firms located there and it became the distributing point for all merchandise to the military posts in the southern part of the territory, and a trade centre for large business

with Sonora. The stores for Camps Wallen, Cameron, Lovell, Bowie, Goodwin, and Grant were all received there from Fort Yuma by contractors' trains, and then re-distributed by army teams to these posts as needed. This, of itself, gave a renewed impulse to the business of the town.

Of the Mission of San Xavier del Bac, General Rusling says:

"South of Tucson, some ten miles, on the road to Tubac and Mexico, on the banks of the Santa Cruz still, is the famous church of San Xavier del Bac, a venerable relic of the former Spanish rule in Arizona. The road thither leads through dense mesquite and palo verde bottoms, with water enough in the Santa Cruz to irrigate them all; but, as yet, they were unbroken by husbandmen. The church itself seems to have been built about a hundred years ago, and, though abandoned, is still in a good state of preservation. It is not of adobe, but of large, red, kiln-burnt brick, rough-coated with a yellowish cement that seems well nigh indestructible. It is cruciform in style, with thick and solid walls, and its antique front and towers have originally been decorated with saints, angels, griffins, etc., in niche or bas-relief, though many of these are now mutilated or destroyed. Inside it is handsomely frescoed, and was no doubt once rich in paintings, ornaments, relics, etc., though these have now mostly disappeared. Its roof seems to be a sort of asphaltum or concrete, and appears as tight and firm as when first laid. In one of the towers, there is still a fine chime of bells, that came no doubt originally from Castile

or Arragon. The age of the church is variously reported, but from a cursory examination it appeared to have been erected about the year 1797, although we were shown a mutilated register of marriages, birth, deaths, etc., that began in 1752. This last, however, seemed to antedate the church, as if it had been in use by the Spanish settlement here in early times, before they were able to achieve such an edifice. This church was no doubt a link in the chain of Spanish Missions, that the Jesuits a century or more ago established, from the City of Mexico to Northern California, and was abandoned like the rest of them, with the subsequent collapse of their priestly power. No doubt, in its time, it was the centre of a considerable community there; but now, only a squalid village of Papago Indians crouches at its feet, who regard the aged structure with a superstitious reverence, and will not permit its fine chime of bells to be removed to Tucson, for fear of Our Lady's displeasure. The padre at Tucson comes down and says mass occasionally, and baptizes their young children; but he cannot cajole them out of their bells, and doubtless they would fight, rather than lose them. Altogether, this church is now the best and oldest civilized structure to be found in Arizona. Very slight repairs would fit it for occupancy and worship again; but, unfortunately, there are no inhabitants there now to occupy and worship in it, except the Papagos aforesaid—and as specimens of good clean Christians, they don't amount to much now-a-days, whatever they were once."

From Tucson our travelers returned to Maricopa Wells. There had been very heavy rains at Tucson during their stay, and a great melting of snows in the mountains to the east, so that the usually sluggish, half dry rivers, were now full and booming. The Gila had overflowed its banks, and its whole valley below in many places was inundated. "Ranch after ranch had been swept away, and in several instances the scant inhabitants had barely escaped with their lives, from its treacherous waters. The fine mesquite bottom at Gila Bend was reported four feet under water, and Mr. James' house, corral, etc., there—the finest we saw coming up the Gila—were all gone. The freshet was said to be the highest known there for years, and inflicted a loss on the Gila valley alone, it was alleged, of many thousands of dollars. The road was submerged or washed out in many places, and all travel to and from Yuma was interrupted for weeks, except such as could make its way around over the hills and mesas, by the old Indian trails."

The two rivers, the Gila and the Salt, lay directly across their path to Fort Whipple and Prescott, for which point they were bound. Both rivers were swollen and turbid. No one had forded them for a month. They were still at freshet height, and rising, without bridge or ferry. So they decided to halt at Maricopa Wells for a few days, as they could neither go forward to Prescott, nor backward to Yuma. The delay was most vexatious at such an out of the world place where the mail was intermit-

tent and the freshest newspaper more than a month old. Finally, after waiting a week, which time they employed in investigating the Pimas and Maricopas, and writing up their note books, they heard of a little rowboat owned by a German down at the McDowell crossing of the Gila (probably near Sacaton), which it was reported would suffice to ferry them over, if they took their ambulances well to pieces, and then they would have to mount the boat on a wagon and transport it thirty miles or so, overland, to the Salt, and there repeat the operation. It was slow work ferrying over these two swollen rivers by piecemeal, and was attended by many dangers and difficulties, but was accomplished without accident. It took them two days to cross the Salt, which they did at the McDowell crossing, some fifteen miles below Fort McDowell.

“Late in the afternoon of the second day, leaving our teamsters and little escort to get the ambulances together and repack them, we proceeded up the Salt River to Fort McDowell—the commandant here having heard of our approach, and sent an ambulance to bring us. It was some fifteen miles, part of the way through a dreaded Apache canyon; but we passed safely on, though we did not reach the post until after nightfall. We found the post—the largest and finest in Arizona—short of rations, and wholly out of forage, as it had been for several weeks, because of the spring freshets as it was alleged, though there was plenty at Maricopa Wells, which it would seem might have been got there, if we could. This was suggested to the officer

in charge, and no doubt was well heeded. We remained there until the next afternoon, inspecting the post and its bearings (it seemed admirably located for its work, well into the Apache country, protecting the valley of the Salt and the Gila) and then returned to our ambulances at the crossing. The next morning, by sunrise, we were up and off, for the Prescott road—if we could find it. At Fort McDowell, they told us we could never reach it. Some said it was thirty miles off—others claimed it was fifty or sixty, with an impassable country between. The only thing known definitely was, that there was no road at all down the north bank of the Salt, though we were sure to strike the regular Prescott road, if we kept along down that bank of the river far enough, and could get through. We might meet Apaches anywhere, they said, for it was one of their favorite tramping grounds, or we might go through unmolested, depending on circumstances. We had expected to get an escort of a dozen cavalrymen here, to accompany us to Prescott; but six cavalrymen, and six mounted infantrymen, were all the post could spare. The horses of these, though the best on hand, were so broken down for want of forage, that part were sent back before we got three miles out; and of the balance, only five went through to Prescott with us, by extra care and regular feeding with the grain which we had taken the precaution to bring along from Maricopa Wells. An army wagon, with a six mule team, also from Fort McDowell, furnished transportation



for our escort, as the cavalry horses successively gave out.

“For the first fifteen miles or so, after leaving the Crossing, we found a well broken road, used the year before as a hay road from the river bottoms to Fort McDowell. (This was probably the road built by J. Y. T. Smith to deliver hay at the Fort in 1866-67). But, ultimately, this ended in a bend of the Salt, and from there on all was wild and unbroken—a veritable *terra incognita*. We found the Salt crookeder than a ram’s horn, or a mesquite tree, or anything else that is most crooked and involved. Laying our course partly by the compass, and partly by the Salt’s fringe of cottonwoods, we struck across from bend to bend of the river, sure only of one thing, and that was—keeping near to water. We found the river bottoms, as a rule, thick with chemisal, relieved here and there by dense mesquite groves, looking in the distance like old orchards, through which it was almost impossible to penetrate with ambulance or wagon. Now and then we had to flank a slough, or flounder through a quicksand, and sundown still found us pushing along through these bottoms, though we had made fully thirty miles since morning. We went into camp by the river side just at dusk, thoroughly worn out, and not without a degree of anxiety, as we had crossed a number of Indian trails during the day, though none seemed fresh. Our animals were well blown, especially the cavalry horses, and the best we could do for them was a bite of corn, as we had no hay along, of course, and it was too late to graze them.”

They were on the road early the next morning, and a struggle of three miles or so brought them to an ill-defined track running in the supposed direction of Wickenburg, and so to Prescott, which they resolved to take, though quite certain that it was not the regular road. It was lucky they did for, in a short time, this road struck directly across the Agua Fria, and came into the true Prescott road near White Tanks. "This Agua Fria, usually one of Arizona's 'dry rivers,' we found with three feet of water in it, and bad quicksands beneath that. However, we discovered a practicable crossing, and soon after nightfall reached the vicinity of White Tanks, some thirty miles, since morning."

From the White Tanks to the Hassayampa was a difficult journey. The narrative continues:

"The Hassayampa itself flows through a wild and rocky canyon, with high precipitous walls on either side; and it was soon apparent that our only alternative was either to flounder through its quicksands, or retrace our steps to Maricopa Wells. The latter was out of the question as our rations and forage were both about exhausted, and, besides, our improvised ferry boat had returned to the Gila; so that the only thing left for us was to try the Hassayampa, and get through, somehow, at all hazards. We had heard of a trail, across the ridge and over the mountains, by the Vulture Mine, and so into Wickenburg, by a roundabout course; but a careful reconnaissance revealed no trace of it. We called a 'council of war,' and discussed the 'situation,' pro and con, with

due gravity, and finally decided that there was nothing for us to do, but to ascend the Has-sayampa; and so, into it we plunged. And, verily, it was a *plunge*. Nothing but a prolonged flounder and plunge, from ten A. M. to six P. M.! Now into the stream; now out on a sandbank; now deep into the quicksand; crossing and recrossing, from side to side, to take advantage of any land—not less than fifteen or twenty times in the course of the twelve miles! Sometimes a cavalryman on horseback, ‘prospecting’ the way for the ambulance, would go down, until it seemed impossible to extricate him and his horse. Again, an infantryman, on foot, would suddenly sink in to his armpits, and call out to come and rescue him. The ambulance would slip to one side, and half of it commence sinking, while the other half remained on solid ground. Then our six mule team would go in, and half of the mules would flounder over the tongue, or turn a summerset out of the harness, and, perhaps, come near drowning, before they could be extricated, while the rest would be all right. Now we would be all ashore clambering along the rocky walls of the canyon, to give the ambulance a better chance; and now, all hands would be out into the water, to start a stalled team, and then such a whooping and shouting, such a whipping and tugging at the wheels, one seldom sees equalled. I campaigned with McClellan, on the Peninsula; I was with Burnside in his Mud Campaign, after Fredericksburg; we had bad roads down in Tennessee and Georgia, when after Joe Johnson and Hood. But this tedious and toilsome drive, through the

canyon and quicksands of the Hassayampa, beat all these; and we never would have got through had we not had light loads, and skilful, plucky, magnificent drivers."

Evidently this trip was made from somewhere about Smith's Mills or Seymour into Wickenburg as the distance was twelve miles and was up the canyon along which the Phoenix & Prescott road is now built. By good luck they made the trip and got into Wickenburg about dusk, with animals thoroughly blown and men pretty well used up. It had taken just a week to come from Maricopa Wells, usually a drive of a day or two, or three, at the farthest, but the Gila and the Salt were still unfordable, and they would have been detained at the Wells probably a fortnight or more longer had it not been for Louis Heller's boat. They were the first party to pass through in a month, and no one was expected to cross the Hassayampa either way, for a month or so to come.

"Of course," the narrative continues, "with such rivers and roads—rivers without either bridges or ferries, and roads that follow the beds of rivers—our only conclusion was, that Arizona was in no hurry, for either population or business; and, I judge, *this* is about so. She must bridge her streams, and construct good substantial roads—at least between all chief points—before she can expect to grow and prosper. This is fundamental in all civilized communities, and she would have recognized it long since, had her population been more from the busy North, than from the indolent, happy-go-lucky South."

Evidently our author was somewhat prejudiced against Southern people and while, according to his own statement, Arizona had a territorial area at that time, including Pah-Ute county, of about a hundred and twenty-seven thousand square miles, she had only a population of about three thousand people, the native Americans being about equally divided between the citizens of the Northern and Southern states, most of whom were engaged in trade, farming and teaming, and she was not able to construct bridges across the treacherous streams of Arizona. All Arizonans know the expense attending such enterprises, and when we had an assured population, the legislatures were constantly giving franchises for ferries, etc., over the rivers, particularly along the Colorado, but they had to be supported by travel, and were rather primitive affairs at best. The Apache was the disturbing element, preventing real development in all lines of industry. As we shall see later on, when this menace was removed, Arizona went forward by leaps and bounds, increasing rapidly in both population and wealth.

Wickenburg was found to be an adobe hamlet of perhaps two hundred inhabitants, depending chiefly on the Vulture mine. Here the party halted for two or three days to rest and recruit, which afforded them an opportunity to visit the mine. The General reports it as follows:

"It is really a fine specimen of gold-bearing quartz, off in the mountains, some fifteen miles west of Wickenburg, whence the ore was then wagoned to the mill, on the Hassayampa at Wickenburg. It consists of a fine vein of free

quartz, from five to fifteen feet wide, and mostly devoid of sulphurets, or other refractory substances. Seventy or eighty men—half of them or more Mexicans—were hard at work, sinking shafts and getting out ore; and already a large amount of work had been done there. One shaft was already down a hundred feet, and another half as far—it being intended to connect the two by a lateral gallery to insure ventilation, etc. Unfortunately, no water could be found near the mine, and all used there then was transported from Wickenburg, at a cost of ten cents per gallon. So, all the ore taken out had to be wagoned, from the mine to the mill at Wickenburg, at a cost of ten dollars per ton. The cost of everything else was about in the same proportion. Nevertheless, we were told the mine paid, and that handsomely, and I sincerely trust it did.

“The mill at Wickenburg, belonging to the same company, was a fine adobe structure, roofed with shingles, and had just gone into operation. They had previously had a small five stamp mill, which paid very well; but this new mill ran twenty stamps, and would crush forty tons of quartz per day, when worked to its full capacity. Their ore was reputed to average from fifty to seventy dollars per ton, though of course ‘assaying’ much more, and we were assured would pay for working, if it yielded only from twenty to thirty dollars per ton. If so, we thought stock in the Vulture Company must be a ‘gilt-edged’ investment; and their noble mine was certainly the best looking enterprise we had yet seen in Arizona. It appeared,

however, to be a sort of 'pocket' vein, as prospecting on either side of it as yet had failed to discover other points worth working. Fine as it was, the mine was embarrassed by financial difficulties, and was then in the hands of creditors, authorized to work it until their claims were met, though these troubles it was thought would soon end."

This was the time when Charley Genung took hold of the mine as one of the creditors, and paid it out of debt by working the ore.

## CHAPTER II.

## CONDITIONS IN 1867 AND 1868 (Continued).

GENERAL RUSLING'S DESCRIPTION CONTINUED—  
SKULL VALLEY—BARRENNESS OF COUNTRY—  
ANCIENT RUINS AND ACEQUIAS—POSSIBILITIES OF GILA AND SALT RIVER VALLEYS—  
PRESCOTT—INDIANS—THEFTS AND RAIDS BY APACHES—POINT OF ROCKS—FORT WHIPPLE—  
WILLIAMSON VALLEY—HARDYVILLE—MOHAVE, WALLAPAI, PAH-UTE AND OTHER HOSTILE INDIAN TRIBES—INDIAN DEPARTMENT BLUNDERS—FORT MOHAVE—W. H. HARDY—  
GENERAL SUMMING UP—PETE KITCHEN'S DESCRIPTION OF TRIP TO SONORA.

Our travellers passed from Wickenburg to Prescott, via Skull Valley, some eighty-four miles, without mishap. They made the distance in two and a half days and rolled into the capital, "just as the last rays of the setting sun were purpling the triple peaks of the distant San Francisco Mountains."

Skull Valley was a narrow vale of perhaps a thousand or two acres, but devoid of timber, and inaccessible in all directions, except over bad mountains. A few ranches had been started and a petty military post was there to protect them, but this post had been ordered away, the location was so faulty, and with its departure, Skull Valley, as a settlement, seemed likely to collapse.

Skull Valley and Wickenburg were the only settlements, indeed the only population, they



found between Maricopa Wells and Prescott, a distance of nearly three hundred miles by the way they travelled. The narrative continues:

"The whole intervening country, as a rule, was barren and desolate, and absolutely without population, except at the points indicated, until you neared Prescott. There were not even such scattered ranches, or occasional stations, as we found in crossing the Colorado Desert, and ascending the Gila; but the whole district seemed given over, substantially, to the coyote and the Indian. The Apaches and Yavapais are the two main tribes there, and were said to infest the whole region, though we saw nothing of them. In the valley of the Hassayampa and across the Aztec Mountains, they certainly had an abundance of ugly looking places, that seem as if specially made for ambuscades and surprises. If they had attacked us in the canyon of the Hassayampa, while floundering through the quicksands there, they would have had things pretty much their own way—at least, at first, vigilant as we were. They had killed a wandering Mexican there, only a few days before; but we did not know it, until we reached Wickenburg, and came through ourselves unscathed. \* \* \*

"As I have already said, we found the intervening country substantially unsettled, and much of it will never amount to anything for agricultural purposes. Its mineral resources may be great; but, as a rule, it lacks both wood and water, and much of it is a barren desert, given over forever to chemisal and greasewood. On the Agua Fria and Hassayampa, however, there are considerable bottoms, that might be success-





Ancient Canals and Ruins, of Gila and Salt River Valleys.

fully irrigated; and between the Gila and the Salt there is a wide district that deserves some further notice. As you come up out of the Gila bottoms, you pass through scattered mesquite trees, and at length enter on a broad mesa (Spanish for 'tableland,') ten or fifteen miles wide by thirty or forty long, which bears every evidence of having once been well cultivated, and densely populated. Instead of mesquite, you here find clumps of chemisal two or three feet high, and bits of broken pottery nearly everywhere. Farther on, some eight or ten miles from the Salt, you find immense ruins in various places, and soon strike a huge acequia winding up from the Salt, in comparison with which all the acequias we had yet seen in Utah or California were the veriest ditches. It must be, I should think, thirty feet wide by ten or twelve deep, and seems like a great canal of modern times. Just where the road to Fort McDowell crosses this, it subdivides into three or four lesser acequias, and these branch off over the mesa indefinitely. This great acequia heads just above where we crossed the Salt. The river has a considerable descent or 'rapids' there, and the ancient constructors of this gigantic watercourse, apparently, knew well how to take advantage of this. They have tapped the river there by three immense mouths, all leading into one common channel; and this they have coaxed along down the bottoms, and gently up the bluff, until at a distance of miles away it at last gained the level of the mesa, and there distributed abroad its fertilizing waters. So, there are other ancient acequias, furrowing the bottoms of the Salt on

either side, though we observed none so large as this.

“The ruins of ancient buildings, thoroughly disintegrated, are scattered widely along these bottoms, and in some places there must certainly have been large cities. The rectilinear courses of the walls, and the dividing lines of the rooms, are all plainly visible still, though nothing remains but the cobblestones and pebbles out of which they seem to have been mainly constructed, and here and there a bit of cement or mortar. The ancient builders and occupiers of these could not have been our present Indians there, because they use different forms and materials. They could not have been Mexicans or Spaniards, because they invariably use brick or adobe. Who they were, where they came from, when they disappeared, and why—these are knotty problems for the antiquarian, which it is to be hoped time will soon solve. One thing is certain, these ancient builders—Aztecs (as popularly believed) or whoever they were—were at least good architects and engineers, and they must have peopled much of Arizona with an industrious and dense population, such as it will not see again—I was going to say—for centuries to come. But the Salt, in those days, must have been a larger river than it is now, or probably ever will be again; because two or three of these old acequias would carry off all its present waters, and leave none for the others, whose remains yet furrow the country there everywhere.

“However, the larger acequias may have been used only as receiving reservoirs, to husband the spring freshets, and for this purpose they might

be soon utilized again. However this may be, there are fine lands all along the bottoms of the Salt, and enough water flowing there yet to irrigate many thousands of acres. Indeed the best lands we saw in Arizona are here in the heart of it, on the Gila and Salt, and in time no doubt there will be flourishing settlements there. What the region needs is a railroad to connect it with 'inside,' or civilization, and this the 'Texas and Pacific,' it seems will eventually furnish. Now, like so much of Arizona, it is inaccessible, or practically five hundred miles across a desert—from about everywhere. A railroad will remedy all this, and stimulate Arizona wonderfully in many ways. The whistle of the locomotive will end her Indian troubles, and many others, and may she hear it echoing and re-echoing among her mountains and canyons very soon! A railroad, indeed, is a great blessing everywhere; but in our western territories it means civilization as well, and without one Arizona will evidently continue to slumber on, as she has for so many years."

Prescott at this time remained about the same as for several years before. It had its full supply of saloons and gambling houses; no churches, although the chaplain from Fort Whipple semi-occasionally preached there. The population was less than five hundred. The placer mines in and around the town were on the eve of failure. Eleven mills, all from five to twenty stamps each, had been erected at mines where the ores assayed from one to two hundred dollars or more per ton, but of all these only one five stamp mill was then running, the Ticon-

deroga, which was reported as only about paying expenses. "Instead of two hundred dollars, or more, per ton, as per assay, the mills in fact could only stamp out and save from ten to twenty dollars per ton; and this was a losing business. A new 'process' was just being tried at the Eureka Mill, which did excellently well, as per assay in the laboratory; but it was uncertain what would be the result when applied to large quantities of ore in the mill. The Bully Bueno and Sterling lodes seemed to be the most in favor. Specimens from the Sterling, that were shown, were indeed wonderful in richness, and there seemed to be no doubt that the ledges around Prescott abound in mines, which will yield very largely, if only a process can be found to treat successfully such obstinate and refractory sulphurets. For the present, however, mining operations about Prescott were very 'sick,' with poor prospect of speedy recovery. The region had indeed two advantages, very rare in Arizona, to-wit, good fuel, and sufficient water. The breadth of timber here, however, had been much overstated. An area of ten miles square or so embraced the bulk of the pine, which was an exceptional growth just there; the rest consisted chiefly of scrawny juniper and scraggly cedar, fit only for fuel and fencing."

Concerning the Indians in Arizona, General Rusling gives the following:

"The Indian population was estimated at about twenty thousand, of whom ten thousand were regarded as friendly, five thousand as hostile and five thousand as half and half—that is,

sometimes friendly, and sometimes hostile, depending on circumstances. To offset and antagonize these, the Government had then about twenty-five hundred regular soldiers in Arizona, which would seem sufficient, if well handled, though the people of course were clamoring for more. The great controlling tribe in Arizona, and extending into New Mexico, and the terror of the Mexican border, were the Apaches. Those that we saw gave one the impression of a fierce, sinewy, warlike race, very different from the Plains Indians, and it was plain there would be no peace in Arizona, nor much hope for its development, until these Apaches received a thorough chastisement. This they had never had yet, from either Mexicans or Americans, and consequently they despised and hated the Pale Faces, as we hate (or ought to hate) Satan himself. They inhabited the mountains chiefly, though they often descended into the plains, and in bands of two or three, or more, scoured the country far and near, as it suited them. About Tucson and Tubac they stole stock, and occasionally killed travellers, often within a mile or two of the towns. Sometimes, for months together, they would leave a road unmolested, and then, suddenly, attacking it at different points, clean out all the ranches. A few miles from Camp McDowell on the road between there and Maricopa Wells, they infested a rocky canyon on the Salt River, and mockingly defied all efforts to expel them. A fortnight before we reached Maricopa Wells, en route to Tucson, a party of them crossed the



Salt and the Gila, and stole ten head of stock from a ranch only three miles from the Wells. About the same time, another party of three lurked around the station at Blue Water, on the road to Tucson, some fifty miles south of the Wells, and, failing to find anything they could steal, vented their spleen by shooting an arrow into a valuable horse that was stabled safely from their reach. This done, the same night they struck across the country, some fifteen or twenty miles, to the peaceable Pima settlements on the Gila, where they stole a couple of horses apiece, and made good their escape with them to the mountains.

“Some of their exploits were very amusing, as well as very daring, worthy of the best days of Osceola or Tecumseh. We heard one of a party that had just preceded us in Arizona. They camped at a station for the night, and thought their animals thoroughly secure when they had put them into an adobe corral, with a wall four or five feet high by two thick, and then lay down themselves across the only entrance, with their rifles by their sides. The stealthy Apaches waited until their pale face friends were well asleep, and then with a piece of dry cow hide, hard and thin, sawed out a section of the adobe wall, at the other end of the corral, and in the morning Los Americanos found themselves horseless and muleless. We may ‘fancy their feelings,’ when they discovered the opening! Just then, I fear, they would have made poor Peace Commissioners! Especially as they had to foot it fifty miles, back to the next station, for new animals!

“There was another story told of a gallant army officer, who had been out on a scout the year before, and was determined not to lose a favorite horse he had along. The Apaches were about thick, and the night before had stolen several animals, in spite of the utmost vigilance. To guard against what he supposed even the possibility of loss, the officer picketed his horse with a lariat to a tree, and then spreading his blankets camped down under the tree—at the same time posting a sentinel over his horse, with strict orders to watch faithfully. Toward morning the sentry thought the horse was a little farther from the tree than he should be; still, as he saw nothing suspicious, he supposed he must be mistaken as to the length of the lariat. After walking a few more beats, he thought the horse was still farther off; but it seemed so little, and the horse was so quiet, he did not think it right to make an alarm. A few beats more, however, convinced him that something must be wrong, as the horse was evidently still farther away. But now, simultaneously with his challenge, lo! an Apache sprang lithely upon the steed, and in a twinkling he was galloping off through the chaparral and cactuses, with a yell of defiance at the astonished Blue Coat! Creeping stealthily up in the dark, with a more than cat-like caution and silence, he had severed the lariat, and edged the horse off little by little, until at last his capture was sure.

“If a party were strong, or not worth cleaning out, or killing, the Apaches usually gave them a wide berth. But woe to those whom they marked for their prey, if not well armed,

and ceaselessly vigilant. They would dog a party for days, with the tireless energy of the sleuth hound, watching for an unguarded moment in which to attack, and then suddenly pounce upon them like fiends, as they were. As a rule, they used bows and arrows still; but many had firearms, and knew how to handle them with deadly effect. We were shown several of their children, captured in different fights, and they were the wiriest, fiercest little savages imaginable. Sullen, dogged, resolute little Red Skins, they lacked only maturity and strength to 'make their mark' on somebody's head; and this they seemed quite likely to do yet, unless their Apache natures were thoroughly 'reconstructed.' They had a peculiar and pleasant penchant for setting fire to haystacks and ranches, and on the whole were a species of population that nobody but an Arizonan would care much to fancy. They were held as servants in different families, and their service in too many instances approximated to downright slavery—so much so, indeed, that the attention of the Territorial authorities was already being directed to the matter.

"As if to give us some proof of their enterprise and audacity, a band of these Apaches made a raid near Prescott, the very day we arrived there. They attacked a ranch only three miles east of this 'New England-like' village, and seized several cattle and drove them off. A mounted scout was at once sent out from Fort Whipple, and though they marched seventy-five miles in twenty-four hours, they failed to come up with the Red Skins. The offi-

---

cer in command reported the bold marauders as strong in numbers, and fleeing in the direction of Hell Canyon—an ugly, diabolical looking place, some forty miles east of Prescott. Gen. Gregg, then commanding the District of Prescott, immediately ordered out two fresh companies of cavalry, and, himself at their head, made a forced march by night, in order to surprise them in their reported stronghold. Next morning at daybreak, he was at Hell Canyon, but no Apaches were found there, nor any trace of them. After a brief halt, he ordered the cavalry to follow down the canyon to its junction with the Verde, and after scouring all the canyons centering there, to return by a wide detour to Fort Whipple. The General himself now returned to Prescott, and I cheerfully bear witness to his vigor and chagrin, having accompanied him out and back. A detachment of the cavalry, a day or two afterwards, succeeded in finding a rancheria of Apaches in a villainous canyon, miles away to the southwest of the Verde—a thin curling smoke in the mountains revealing their presence. The troops pushed boldly in, and came suddenly on the rancheria or village before they were discovered. Dismounting from their horses, they poured in a rapid volley from their Spencer carbines, that killed five Apaches, and wounded twice as many more. The rest fled, but in a few moments bravely rallied, and soon came swarming back, down the canyon and along its rocky cliffs, in such numbers and with such spirit, that the officer in command deemed it prudent to fall back on the main column. This he succeeded in doing, but it required a march

of several miles, as the column had moved on; and when he rejoined, it was thought best for the whole command to return to Fort Whipple, as their rations and forage were about exhausted. Subsequently, Gregg sent them out again, and this time they succeeded in damaging the Apaches very considerably; but it was not long before they were lurking about the country again.

“The rough ride to Hell Canyon and back, despite occasional snow squalls, was not unpleasant, and not without its interest. Our route in the main was down the valley of Granite Creek, and past the site of old Fort Whipple, now called Postle’s ranch. Here was a fine plateau of several hundred acres, with acequias and a petty grist mill, the whole used formerly by the troops; but occupied now by only a family or two. The truth is, population was too sparse, and the Apaches too plenty, to make farming an agreeable occupation just there. We saw several men at work in the fields, as we rode along, all with rifles slung across their backs, and the infrequent settlers protested they meant to quit the country, as soon as their harvests matured. The last ranch eastward—the one most remote from Prescott, and, consequently, the very edge of the frontier there—was owned and occupied by what may justly be called a typical American emigrant. Born in New Jersey, the nephew of an eminent minister there, he early emigrated to Canada, and thence to Michigan. Here he married, and soon afterwards emigrated to Illinois. Thence he went to Kansas, and thence to New Mexico. Subse-

quently he emigrated to California, and when he grew weary there, as he could 'go west' no farther, concluded to remove to Arizona. Here he had been for two years, with his family on the very edge of the border; but was now tired of the West, and meditating a return East. He said his children were growing up, and needed schoolhouses and churches, and he meant to sell out and leave as soon as practicable.

"The country as a whole proved barren and sterile, like so much of Arizona elsewhere, though here also the Aztecs (or whoever the ancient population were) had left their marks, as on the Salt and the Gila. The remains of edifices or fortifications and acequias, were still quite visible in various places, and no doubt the ancient settlers had followed up the rivers, and their tributaries, nearly everywhere. They seem to have been a pushing, progressive people, bent on conquest and civilization, after their kind, and doubtless swayed the whole interior of the continent. At Point of Rocks, on Willow Creek, we halted for an hour or two, to explore the wonderful rock formations there; and subsequently dined with a settler on a wild turkey that stood four feet high and weighed forty-three pounds, when first shot, and about thirty pounds dressed. We were tired and hungry, from long riding and light rations, and you may be sure enjoyed our meal to the full.

"Fort Whipple, already alluded to several times, was situated on Granite Creek, a mile and a half east of Prescott, near the centre of a reservation there a mile square. It consisted of a rude stockade, enclosing the usual log quar-

ters and barracks of our frontier posts, and was then Headquarters of all the district north of the Gila. Its garrison was small, and dependencies few and petty; but the cost of maintaining it seemed something enormous. Here are a few of the prices then current at the post; hay cost about sixty dollars per ton; grain, about twelve dollars per bushel; lumber, from fifty to seventy-five dollars per thousand; freight on supplies from San Francisco (and about everything had to come from there via the Gulf of California and the Colorado), two hundred and fifty dollars per ton; and these all in coin. The flagstaff alone, quite a respectable 'liberty-pole,' was reported to have cost ten thousand dollars; and District Headquarters—a one and a half story frame house, surrounded by verandas, but barely comfortable and genteel—was said to have cost one hundred thousand dollars. This last, plain as it was, was then about the best modern edifice in Arizona, but was used as the Post Hospital—Gen. Gregg ('Cavalry Gregg' of the Army of the Potomac) in the true spirit of the soldier, declining to occupy it, until his sick and disabled men were first well sheltered and provided for. Himself and staff, as yet, shared the log cabins of the Post proper, through whose open crannies the wind and rain had free course to run and be glorified during every storm. We were there during a wild tempest of rain and hail, as well as for a week or more besides, and learned well how to appreciate their infelicities and miseries. All honor to this chivalrous and gallant Pennsylvanian, for his courtesy and humanity. A Bayard and a

Sydney combined, surely he deserved well of his country; and the Army may justly be proud of such a representative soldier."

Williamson Valley, about twenty miles from Prescott, they found to be one of the best agricultural and grazing districts they had seen in Arizona. There were but two or three settlers there at that time, though "there were apparently several thousands of acres fit for farms." The surrounding hills abounded in scattered cedars and juniper, which could be used for fencing and fuel, and game was more abundant there than at any place they had yet been. "Quails," the writer says, "found everywhere in Arizona to some extent, here soon thickened up; the jack rabbits bounded more numerous through the bushes; even pigeons and wild turkeys were heard of; and as we rattled down through a rocky glen, at the western side of the valley, a herd of likely deer cantered leisurely across the road—the first we had seen in Arizona, or indeed elsewhere in the West."

From this point the next settlement was Hardyville, where the Mohaves scratched the soil a little so as to plant some corn and barley, and raise a few beans, vegetables, etc., the surplus of which they sold chiefly at Hardyville for Mr. Hardy to resell to the Government again—of course at a profit. It seems, on the whole that they did not raise enough from their broad acres to feed and clothe themselves comfortably; and our travellers were told that they would often go hungry were it not for the gratuitous issues of flour, meal, and other supplies occasionally made to them by the commanding officer



at Fort Mohave. General Rusling estimated their number at about a thousand; he says that down the Colorado at La Paz there was another branch of them, more numerous. These Indians complained, and quite rightly, says the writer, that the government did not furnish them implements, tools, seeds, etc., to enable them to work their lands and support themselves, while the savage Wallapais, Pah-Utes and other hostile tribes were being constantly bribed with presents and annuities. He says: "This, however, was only another instance of the stupidity and blundering of our Indian Department at that time, whose policy, or rather impolicy, seemed to be to neglect friendly Indians, and exhaust its money and efforts on hostile ones, under the plea of 'pacifying' them! As if 'gifts' and 'annuities' ever really pacified or civilized a Red Skin yet, or ever will! No; the only true policy with our Indians, then as now, is to encourage and reward the friendly in every right way; while the hostile ones should be turned over to the Army, for chastisement and surveillance, to the uttermost, until they learn the hard lesson, that henceforth they must behave themselves."

At Fort Mohave they found a handful of troops and two or three officers, all praying for the day when they might be ordered elsewhere, assured that fortune could send them to no worse post, outside of Alaska. General Rusling says: "One officer had his wife along, a lady delicately bred, from Pittsburg, and this was her first experience of Army life. When we first arrived she tried to talk cheerily, and bore up bravely for awhile; but before we left, she broke

down in tears, and confessed to her utter loneliness and misery. No wonder, when she was the only white woman there, no other within a hundred miles or more; and no newspaper or mail even, except once a month or fortnight, as things happened to be."

There was a mill at Hardyville, erected to crush the ores from the adjoining mines, but it was idle. W. H. Hardy, the owner and founder of Hardyville, was a most active citizen, holding government contracts, and controlling all the business of the place.

Summing up his experience in Arizona, General Rusling says:

"The great drawback to Arizona then, overshadowing perhaps all others, not excepting the Apaches, was the perfectly *frightful and ruinous cost of transportation*. To reach any mining district there from California, except those along the Colorado, you had to travel from three to five hundred miles through what are practically deserts; and for every ton of freight carried into or out of the Territory, you were called upon to pay from three to five cents per pound, per hundred miles, in coin. Golconda, itself, could not flourish under such circumstances, much less Arizona—which is scarcely a Golconda. The patent and palpable remedy for all this, was either a railroad or the speedy and regular navigation of the Colorado. It seemed nonsense to say that the Colorado could not be navigated, and that, too, at rates reasonably cheap. It looked no worse than the Ohio and the Missouri, and like western rivers ordinarily; and there appeared

but small hope for Arizona very speedily, until she availed herself to the full of its actual advantages. With the alleged mines along the Colorado, from Ft. Yuma to El Dorado, in good operation, her population, as it increased, would naturally overflow to other districts; and, in the end, arid Arizona would become reasonably prosperous. But, like all other commonwealths, she must have a base to stand on and work from. That base seemed naturally and necessarily the Colorado River, indifferent as it was. And all attempts to develop herself, except from that, in the absence of a railroad, seemed likely to end like the efforts of the man who tried to build a pyramid with the apex downward."

During these years, 1867 and 1868, attempts were made to establish ranches south of Tucson, on the Sonoita and at other places, and some of the adventurous agriculturists and stockmen paid heavily for the experiment. Tom Hughes had his ranch plundered several times, so did Charley Shibell; the Penningtons paid the forfeit of their lives for their daring; Pete Kitchen, although the Indians killed his herder and his adopted son, and filled his pigs with arrows, was the only one who withstood their raids, which were, in many respects, like his description of a trip from his ranch to Sonora; which was: "To-son; "To-bac; To-macacori; To-Hell"; this being the terminus. The only part of the Territory which, from an agricultural standpoint improved during these years, was the Salt River Valley and the valley of the Gila about Florence.

## CHAPTER III.

## EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

**ALONG THE GILA RIVER: ADAMSVILLE AND FLORENCE—CHARLES ADAMS, FOUNDER OF ADAMSVILLE—NAME CHANGED TO SANFORD—WILLIAM DUMONT FIRST POSTMASTER—RESENTMENT AGAINST CHANGE—BICHARD BROS., AND THEIR FLOURING MILLS—REPUTED THAT LEVI RUGGLES BUILT FIRST HOUSE IN FLORENCE—DISPUTE OF AUTHORITIES OVER SAME—CHARLES G. MASON, FIRST SETTLER IN FLORENCE—JOSEPH COLLINGWOOD OPENS FIRST STORE—DESCRIPTION OF RUGGLES' RESIDENCE—IRRIGATING CANALS IN AND AROUND FLORENCE—PAT HOLLAND—PIONEERS—FIRST CATHOLIC CHURCH IN CENTRAL ARIZONA—FLORENCE NAMED BY GOVERNOR McCORMICK IN HONOR OF HIS WIFE—DISCOVERY OF SILVER KING MINE—FIGHT WITH, AND DEFEAT OF, PINAL APACHES—PRIMROSE HILL KNOWN AS "POSTON'S FOLLY"—MARICOPA WELLS—PRE-EMPTION OF BY JOHN B. ALLEN—MORGAN'S FERRY—MRS. CLIFFORD'S DESCRIPTION OF "MONTEZUMA'S FACE"—MARICOPA CHARLEY'S RIDICULOUS PURCHASES.**

This History of Arizona, so far as it relates to the settlement of the Gila and Salt Rivers, in the absence of printed records, is taken from interviews with old settlers, in Arizona parlance, "old-timers," and I have had to rely upon their

statements for the following, which may not be entirely reliable.

The first settlements in the Territory, included within the boundaries of Maricopa County as originally established in 1871, were made along the Gila River at Adamsville and Florence. Some claim that the first building erected was at the old town of Adamsville, about three miles west of Florence. From the best evidence at hand, both towns were located in the same year, 1866. During that year Charles Adams located at what was afterwards Adamsville. He took out a ditch there and irrigated his quarter section of land and it soon became a prosperous village. In the winter of 1866-67, the first store was opened, according to James M. Barney, the names of the proprietors I have not been able to ascertain. In the early part of 1871 the district was of sufficient importance for a postoffice. William Dumont was the first postmaster, but the postoffice name was changed to Sanford in honor of Captain George B. Sanford of the First United States Cavalry, who was, for many years, in command at Fort McDowell and the record of whose combats with the Indians has been previously noted. This action of the postoffice department caused much criticism throughout the Territory. The Arizona "Miner," in 1871, said that "at a spot in the Valley of the Gila, situated between Florence and Sacaton, some five years since, a pioneer named Charles Adams located a piece of ground, erected a shanty, and proceeded to divest his property of the offensive shrubbery, preparatory to the sowing of a crop of grain. The location was in



Ruins of Adamsville.



the midst of a large tract of land, and soon a thriving settlement sprang up, in the center of which Mr. Adams remained. At the solicitation of his neighbors he laid out a townsite on his property, gave lots to all who wished to build, and with one accord the whole community agreed that the town should be named Adamsville.

"The entire piece of property originally located by Mr. Adams was subsequently sold by him, but the town still retained the name of Adamsville, and all were satisfied until early in the present year, Territorial Delegate McCormick to satisfy a personal grudge of a political character against Mr. Adams, concluded to have the name changed. With this object in view he managed to have the name of the postoffice changed from Adamsville to Sanford. His hope and intention was that the town would for convenience sake, adopt the name of the postoffice, when his purpose would have been accomplished. The object, too, has been partly secured, but not so firmly rooted that it may not be eradicated. The name of that town is Adamsville; and you, pioneers, who would protect and preserve the memory of one another from the spoliatory hands of the vandal politician, refer to it as such. Address your letters, when you have occasion to write thither, to Sanford, P. O., Adamsville, and let outside despoilers see and understand that they may not manipulate this simple heritage which you would hand down to posterity."

It should be remembered that the "Miner" at that time, was edited by John Marion, who



never forgave McCormick for the part he took in removing the capital from Prescott to Tucson.

After the departure of Mr. Adams, the founder of the place, who moved to the Salt River Valley, Adamsville became the headquarters of the Bichard Brothers, well known business men of the Gila Valley, who erected a modern flouring mill at that place. The Bichards were the first traders with the Pima Villages, and about the year 1865, became the owners of a primitive flouring mill at Casa Blanca, which was destroyed in the winter of 1868 by one of the great floods which occasionally occurred in the Gila Valley. Before its destruction this mill was used to grind corn and grain furnished by the Pima Indians. The Bichards constructed a new mill at Adamsville in 1869, which was provided with the most improved machinery of that day, shipped in at great expense from the Pacific Coast, and it was called "The Pioneer Flouring Mill." This mill was the first modern flouring mill erected in the Territory.

There were several members of the Bichard family, the head of which was William, an able and energetic business man.

The first house built in Florence was in 1866, by Levi Ruggles. Ruggles came to Arizona during that year as Indian Agent. He was a member of the Council in the Legislative Assemblies of 1873 and 1877, and was also Register and Receiver of the Land Office. He was a native of Ohio, and his wife was Cynthia M. Thorn. He was one of the principal merchants

of the town that he helped to found and build up. (Fish Mss.) He died in 1891.

Elliott's History of Arizona (1884), says: "Charles G. Mason was the first settler in Florence; built the first adobe house there in the summer of 1866. In March, 1869, Joseph Collingwood opened the first store in Mason's Building. Levi Ruggles located in Florence in October, 1868." He afterwards built a fine residence there which is thus described in the work last named:

"It is a real pleasure to visit the beautiful home of Col. Levi Ruggles, the Patriarch of Florence. It is a perfect little paradise, and shows what can be done in this 'desert' land with water, labor and taste. He has a very fine variety of grafted trees, which show a vigorous and healthy growth. His peach, apricot, almond, plum, quince, pear, olive, fig, and pomegranate trees are remarkably strong and healthy, and the amount of young fruit they now show is simply marvellous. The trees will not be able to stand up under the load, and it will be necessary to shake some of the fruit off. We do not believe it possible to find fruit to surpass, either in size or quality, that grown in this orchard. The yield is regular and certain. It is the same each year. The same is true of every other orchard in the valley. There are no failures in the fruit crop, and it does not take long to make a good orchard here. Many kind of trees will bear the second year, after setting out. It is pre-eminently a fruit country.

“Colonel Ruggles also has some very choice varieties of the grape, which, like the fruit trees, are remarkable in their growth and yield here. On his muscatel vines are clusters of grapes a foot in length now, and when these clusters shall have attained their full growth, they will be at least sixteen inches long, and weigh four or five pounds.

“In addition to his fruit trees and vines, Colonel Ruggles has in his orchard sixty varieties of the rose family, all of which grow luxuriantly, and blossom freely.”

This part of the Gila Valley advanced rapidly. Among the first business men located there were Joe Collingwood and E. N. Fish, who did business under the name of E. N. Fish & Co. They started in business in 1868, it being a branch of their business in Tucson. They had government contracts and wanted wheat and barley, the demand for which caused the rapid settlement of that locality. The settlers were backed by the merchants, who induced them to take up land, and furnished them credit, wheat and barley being the principal crops which they raised. The farming was principally done by Mexicans. All the ditches around from Florence down to Adamsville and below, were built by peon labor, who received a dollar a day and their rations. It was pick and shovel work. The settlers usually paid themselves out of debt with one crop of grain.

Mr. George A. Brown, an old resident of Florence, gives me the following history of the canals built in that section from 1868 up to 1875:

“The first ditch was taken out to irrigate the lands around Blackwater, about twelve miles below the town of Florence on the south side of the river, probably known as the Blackwater Ditch. This ditch was built in the middle sixties, and covered about five hundred acres of land. It was about three miles long. The second ditch was the Walker Ditch on the same side of the river, the south side. It was about the same length as the Blackwater Ditch, and covered about four hundred acres of land. This seems to have been taken out shortly after the Blackwater Ditch about 1867. The next ditch on the south side was the White Ditch, which was taken out before the Walker Ditch, but I am giving them in their rotation along the river. It covered three or four hundred acres of land, and was about the same length as the others. The fourth ditch on the south side was the Adamsville Ditch, which was probably about four miles long, and covered about four or five hundred acres of land in the old town of Adamsville, four miles below Florence. The fifth ditch was known as the Chase & Brady Ditch. It was four or five miles in length. At the lower end of the ditch was the farm and mill of Peter R. Brady. The mill was run by water from this ditch which was built about 1868 or 1869. It covered nearly a thousand acres of land. The next ditch was the Alamo Juan Maria, which was taken out about 1868. ‘There was water in that ditch, I think,’ says Mr. Brown, ‘in 1868, and it ran through the upper part of town. It was six miles in length and covered about two thousand acres of land.’

The next above was the Holland Ditch built in 1868. Water was turned into it in 1869. The Holland Ditch proper was three or four miles long, and covered some seven or eight hundred acres of land. What was known as the Wheat Ditch was simply an extension of the Holland Ditch. Holland let Wheat and others have water, and an extension was built known as the Wheat Ditch, and it was built down to Adamsville. The Wheat extension was about six miles long. It was built in 1870 or 1871. The Wheat Extension probably covered from four to five hundred acres of land.

“Pat Holland, who built the Holland Ditch, became one of the large land owners around Florence, and did a great deal towards the development of Pinal County. He was afterwards supervisor of the County, and during the early eighties dealt largely in hogs in addition to his farming, supplying many of the neighboring mining camps with pork.

“The farthest ditch west of Florence, not on the reservation, was known as the Swiss Ditch, and it was built in the early seventies, probably 1871. Joe Spinaz, who is still alive, had two brothers, and they took out the ditch. There were five shares of stock in the ditch; Joe had one, and his brothers, Andres and Yacob, each had one, and there were two Mexicans who each had one. Each share represented a hundred and sixty acres of land. This ditch covered a little more land than the five quarters, and in addition to these five quarters, it covered a part of Antonio Lopez’ hundred and sixty acres. This ditch was three or four miles long. The

next ditch taken out was by Sylvester Andrada. It was two or three miles long, and covered two hundred acres of land which he owned. The Stiles Ditch above the town on the north side was taken out about 1868 or 1869. It was about six miles long, and covered about seven hundred acres. The next, known as the Sharp Ditch, was three miles long, and covered about two hundred acres of land. It was completed about the year 1873. Next on the north side comes what was known as the McClellan Ditch. It was taken out before McClellan settled on the property. It was three miles long and covered from two to three hundred acres of land."

Among the pioneers of this locality were the following: J. W. Anderson, who came to Florence in 1869 and farmed in 1870 under the Holland Ditch, after which he went to work for E. N. Fish & Co. Mr. Anderson was an educated man and a polished gentleman. I knew him well. He was a man of undoubted integrity and ability. He was a native of North Carolina. He left that State in his early youth, at the age of nineteen, first going to Wisconsin and Minnesota, when, attracted by the gold discoveries in 1849, he started with a company for the Golden State. They came by way of Tucson, passing through there in 1850, and went from Tucson, via the Pima Villages, to Yuma, where they were delayed somewhat on account of the Yuma Indians, who were hostile at that time. They arrived in California in the fall of 1850, and he went into the mining country, where he remained prospecting and mining for about two years, when he went into Oregon and

a mule to pack their belongings. Among the incidents along the road which they experienced was coming across the coach which still lay at the other side of Yuma on the road, where it had been turned over at the time of the robbery of the United States paymaster. The sheriff of San Diego county had some of the outfit, and Harris and his friend met them going into San Diego. Harris recognized two of the prisoners as men he knew in Nevada, where they had killed a peddler and taken his whole outfit. From there they came south and helped to rob the paymaster.

John C. Harris was Probate Judge for about nine years and is now living. He is a widower and had seven children, six of them living. He has retired from business and spends much of his time at Ray.

Joe Spinas is among the old settlers and is still living at Florence engaged in the cattle business. He is reputed to be wealthy. He married Sylvester Andrada's daughter, and has two daughters by her, Mrs. Phil Nicholas, and Mrs. Ed. Devine. His wife died several years ago.

Steve Bailey came to the Gila Valley in 1870, and worked for the Richard Brothers.

Andres Spinas, who settled in the Valley in 1870, now lives in Tucson.

Sylvester Andrada, who took out the Sylvester Ditch, was among the first settlers. He first came into the Gila Valley in 1863, and afterwards located there in 1868. He was a Mexican, said to have been born near Altar, in Sonora. He became naturalized and was a first class

citizen, respected by all. He died in or about the year 1913, at the age of 86.

Victorio Lopez was another early Mexican settler. In the fight between Gandara and Pesquiera for the Governorship of Sonora, he, being a Gandara man, was on the losing side. He came to the Gila Valley in 1868, and settled on 160 acres of land under the Swiss canal. He was married and had four boys and one daughter.

Martin A. Stiles was the first Receiver of the Land Office in Florence. According to Mr. Brown, he could neither read nor write, and was a very unreliable man. Ruggles conducted the business of his office. Stiles was killed at the ranch belonging to his wife, by his stepson, Bob Bible, about the year 1883.

In 1870 the settlers in and around Florence were as great in number, or greater, than those in and about Phoenix, and in the Legislature of 1871, which created the county of Maricopa, as will be seen further on, they made an effort to create the county of Pinal, embracing the Salt River Valley, with Florence as its county seat. At that time the population of Florence was estimated to be five or six hundred. Here the Catholics built their first Church in Central Arizona, known as the Assumption Church.

The town of Florence was located about half a mile from the Gila River, and was in the center of a very rich agricultural country which, like the Salt River Valley, would grow almost anything with irrigation. It was an adobe town, built in the Mexican style. One-half of its population, at least, were Mexicans. It was



named by Governor McCormick in honor of his wife. The first postoffice and mail facilities were obtained through the efforts of Governor McCormick and Levi Ruggles. Mr. Tom Ewing was appointed postmaster, but deputized Joseph Collingwood to run the office. The first mail arrived in September, 1869, on horseback from the Blue River Station, twenty-five miles distant on the Overland Stage road. One writer says:

"The town has a homelike promise in its out of doors aspect. It lies in the Gila Valley, encircled by a wide stretch of delicious green and ripening fields of grain and alfalfa. To the northwest is a high, extensive plain. To the south, and trending east, are the usual ranges of low volcanic and granitic mountains, while across to the south, the eye can discern the far outline of the Picacho Peak. To the north, and trending west, can be seen a range of bold outline, marked on the map as Superstition Mountains. There is a wide expanse of undulating plain to the east, and southwesterly the stage road to this place skirts near the foot of the volcanic hills already noticed. A considerable quantity of land in the valley is under irrigation."

The prosperity of Florence dates from the discovery and working of the Silver King mine. The following account of its discovery is condensed from "Elliott's History of Arizona."

In 1870, when a party of soldiers were building a road up the Pinal Mountains under orders from General Stoneman, one of the soldiers named Sullivan, employed in cutting the trail,

when returning from his work one evening, sat down to rest on a projecting rock, near the camp, and began picking up loose fragments of rock about him, amongst which there were some small but heavy black, metallic-looking lumps. These, instead of breaking up when pounded on the stones, became flattened out, and were evidently metallic, somewhat resembling lead. This attracted his attention, but he did not fully realize the importance of his find. He, however, gathered a few of the lumps and went on to camp without saying anything about his discovery to his comrades; his term of service expired soon afterwards; he was discharged from the service and made his way to the ranch of Charles G. Mason, located on the Gila River.

Mr. Mason was one of the very few frontiersmen who braved the terrors of the Apache and staked out a farm on the fertile bottom lands of the river. Sullivan remained at the place some time, and frequently showed the black ore, since familiarly known amongst the miners and prospectors of the region, as "nugget silver," to Mr. Mason, but without telling him exactly where he had found it. Mr. Mason supposed that he would go back to the place, and, no doubt, expected to go with him and participate in the benefits of the discovery, but one day Sullivan suddenly disappeared and was not heard of for years after. He was supposed to have been killed by the Apaches, or to have perished on the desert, in the attempt, perhaps, to return to the place where he had found the rich silver ore.

In the year 1875 Mr. Mason and one of his neighbors, Benjamin W. Regan, formed a party

of five, consisting of themselves, William H. Long, Isaac Copeland, and another to visit the Globe District, taking a train of animals to bring out some of the ore. On their way back, March 21st, 1875, they were attacked by Apaches and one of their party was killed. His body was taken to Camp Supply, at the summit of the Stoneman Grade, and was buried by his companions in one of the old stone baking ovens used for baking bread by Stoneman's soldiers. When the survivors reached the foot of the grade, near to the water and camp ground, Copeland was sent to break off some of the croppings from projecting rocks at one side of the trail, and bring them into camp two miles below. He went to the place indicated, and soon after came hurrying into camp, shouting: "I've struck it." The excited and hopeful prospectors gathered around him, but they were in no condition to remain at that time to explore the locality or to make their prize more certain and secure. Travel worn, weary and saddened by the loss of their comrade, and without provisions, they hastened on to the settlement on the Gila, at Florence, crossing the dreaded desert at night. The next day, jealously guarding their secret, they gathered supplies together and hastened back to the discovery point. There, sure enough, they found the little black nuggets strewing the surface, and mineral stains, of many colors, including green and blue, in the substance of the rock. The long sought treasure was found at last. Sullivan's discovery was no longer his secret.

The ownership of the location of the Silver King claim was then equally divided between the four survivors of the party of five, each holding one-fourth. The mine was worked continuously for many years, and was one of the greatest producers in the Territory. Its ore was milled about ten or twelve miles from the mine, but Florence was really the shipping point, and benefitted very largely through its proximity to the Silver King Mine. Here supplies were bought and the rich ore shipped to San Francisco for reduction and refining. The story goes on:

"One day in 1882 an aged man came slowly into the thriving settlement at Picket Post, and with great interest wandered about the Silver King Mill, where twenty stamps were pounding out silver from the rock. The man was evidently in need of help, and soon went to the office of the company and announced himself as Sullivan, the old soldier, the original discoverer of the vein, and humbly asked for work. Although long before he had been given up as dead, and very few of his old acquaintances survived, he was identified beyond a doubt, and was immediately taken into the company's service by the day. His story was briefly told as follows: On leaving Mason's ranch he crossed the wide deserts to the westward as far as the great Colorado river, and beyond it into California. Being penniless he had sustained himself by working as a farm hand in California. Always hoping to obtain sufficient means to return to Arizona and secure the benefits of his discovery, he had labored on year after year, looking

vaguely forward, and keeping the secret of the locality to himself, until one day he heard of the discovery of the rich deposit of silver by Mason and others. He was convinced that the place had been found, and that he had lost his chance of making the location for himself."

The neighborhood of Florence was, for a long time, the scene of Apache troubles until a decisive issue was made in the early seventies, in which their power was forever broken in that region. General Stoneman was stationed, with several companies of United States soldiers, at Picket Post, the present site of the Silver King Mills, thirty miles north of Florence, in the Superstition Mountains. The post was in a valley, on Queen's Creek, easily overlooked from a high ledge of the mountains known as Tordillo Peak, and all of Stoneman's movements were noted in the inception. On top of the mountain was a rancheria of Apaches. These occasionally poured down some unknown pathway upon the settlers along the Gila Valley, stealing, burning, and killing, and when pressed by troops, would vanish in the canyons. The location of the village was suspected, from a solitary Indian now and then seen perched upon these peaks, watching proceedings at the post, from which his station was inaccessible. All attempts by Stoneman to get at them were fruitless. At length, emboldened by their successes, they raided a ranch near Florence, and drove away a band of cattle. The Florentines armed and followed, till, after several days of patient pursuit, they found the trail that led to the rancheria. The Indians, doubtless feeling

secure in this fastness, neglected to post videttes, and thus the Florentines were enabled to steal upon them by night, and at daybreak attacked the rancheria, which was situated only a few yards back from the brow of the bluff overlooking Pickett Post. The Indians seeing they were surrounded, fired a few shots, then threw down their guns, and went to meet the approaching Florentines, with hands raised in token of surrender; but the latter seeing their advantage, and remembering that mercy to them was cruelty to the defenseless families on the Gila, determined to make the most of the situation and continued firing upon them. When about two-thirds had fallen, seeing no chance for quarter, the remainder ran to the bluff, where their videttes had been so long stationed to watch Stoneman, and threw themselves over, striking the rocks two hundred feet below. The Florentines could see their mangled remains from the place where they sprang over. Not a single warrior escaped, but the women and children were turned over to General Stoneman. About fifty bucks went over the bluff.

The above, condensed from Elliott's History of Arizona, is undoubtedly the fight which Captain Walker, in command of a company of Pimas, had with the Pinal Apaches. It is doubtful whether more than three or four white men were in this expedition.

From Elliott's History is also taken the following:

"Near the town of Florence is Primrose Hill, a solitary cone-like peak, that rises from the mesa to the height of many hundred feet. That

queer genius, Chas. D. Poston, who some years ago, was a delegate in Congress from this Territory, for some reason best known to himself, conceived the idea of building upon its apex a temple to the sun, and establishing the religion of the Gheber or Parsee, and went so far as to spend several thousand dollars constructing a road to the top, upon which he planted a flag, bearing a huge sun disk upon its ample folds. At this point, funds gave out, and the project ended. Though the flag is gone, the road may be seen to-day, winding around, a trailing niche in the precipitous sides of the hill, making a complete circuit before the top is reached. He was, for a time, in correspondence with the Parsees of India on the subject. It is known as Poston's Folly.

"Primrose Hill stands on a mesa more than usually sandy and bleak. Coupled with this scheme of the sun temple was another, not less startling and original. It was to establish here, upon the choya cursed, sand made mesa, an ostrich farm. What the birds were to eat, besides pebbles, tarantulas, and choya burrs, is a problem which Mr. Poston never divulged to the public. Two as wild whims never entered human brain, and the regret is that he was not able to carry them out, so that the world could have seen the logical end. With their completion, his professions would have been sufficiently varied, embracing delegate in Congress, ostrich farmer, and Parsee priest."

Maricopa Wells was never embraced within the boundaries of Maricopa County, but, being so closely identified with the prosperity of the

settlements along the Gila and the Salt Rivers, its history is not out of place here. It was a point in Central Arizona from which all parts of the Territory were reached. Here came the shipments from California to be distributed to the different military posts of Pima County, and here was marketed great quantities of grain and other produce, raised by the Maricopa and Pima Indians. It was one of the stations built by the old Butterfield Stage Company, which ceased operations and abandoned its posts throughout Arizona at the beginning of the Civil War.

Among the early traders of Maricopa Wells, as previously noted, was John B. Allen, who pre-empted a tract of land of a hundred and sixty acres, his pre-emption notice being the first of its kind within the confines of Arizona. Here Mr. Allen established a small store and grain station, which he conducted for some time, and later on Grinnell & Co., also started a similar establishment. Not far from the Wells, Henry Morgan afterwards one of the early Phoenix merchants, had a small trading post, where he bought wheat from the Indians in return for the necessities of life. At an early day the large mercantile establishment of George B. Hooper & Co., of Arizona City, now Yuma, maintained a branch store at the Wells, where they purchased quantities of grain for their trade. Messrs. Hinton, Carr and Barney, members of that firm, at different times resided there. When the settlements along the Gila and Salt Rivers were well established Maricopa



Wells had grown into a place of much importance, it being the largest stage station on the road between Yuma and Tucson. In 1870 the station came into the possession of Larkin W. Carr and James A. Moore, the latter one of the oldest residents of the Territory, coming here from California during the early mining settlements.

There was a good wagon road from Phoenix to the Wells from which, before crossing the Gila river, the traveler had a good view of the Maricopa Indian Village. This road also passed Henry Morgan's trading post. Morgan also operated a ferry on this road across the Gila, known as Morgan's Ferry. At the Wells, Carr and Moore had a large store, well filled with goods of every kind; a well of good water which never dried, and around the station was a grassy valley and a mesquite grove. From Maricopa Wells could be seen the stone face of the southern end of the Maricopa Mountains, which had the appearance of the face and head of an Indian, and which the Pimas believed was a profile of their god, Montezuma. It was the custom of these Indians when water became scarce in the Gila River, and short crops seemed imminent, to beseech this god to send rain and snow, that the Gila might again fill up and enable them to raise an abundant harvest of corn and vegetables.

As one neared the station, coming from the west, a still better view could be had of this interesting mountain profile. Mrs. Clifford, in her "Overland Tales," speaks of it in the following words:

“Among the most beautiful of all the legends told here, is that concerning this face. It is Montezuma’s face, so the Indians believe (even those in Mexico who have never seen the image), and he will awaken from his long sleep some day, will gather all the brave and the faithful around him, raise and uplift his downtrodden people, and restore to his kingdom the old power and the old glory, as it was before the Hidalgos invaded it. So strong is this belief in some parts of Mexico that people who passed through that country years ago, tell me of some localities where fires are kept constantly burning, in anticipation of Montezuma’s early coming. It looks as though the stern face up there was just a little softened in its expression by the deep slumber that holds the eyelids over the commanding eye; and all nature seems hushed into death-like stillness. Day after day, year after year, century after century, slumbers the man up there on the height, and life and vegetation sleep on the arid plains below, a slumber never disturbed, a sleep never broken, for the battle cry of Yuma, Pima and Maricopa, that once rang at the foot of the mountain, did not reach Montezuma’s ear; and the dying shrieks of the children of those who came far over the seas to rob him of his scepter and crown, fell unheeded on the rocks and deserts that guard his sleep.”

Here also the Indians were accustomed to exchange their grain and other products for ballietas, tickets payable in merchandise at the store, and with the prodigality of the untutored race, spent much of their earnings in useless apparel, as illustrated by the following:

The stores always kept a supply of goods unsalable in other localities, but which were greedily purchased by these Indians. Maricopa Charley, who died only a few years ago, at that time a young man, was rather fond of dress parade. According to John F. Crampton, he came into the store one day, then owned by Moore and Carr, and seeing some hoops hanging up, asked what they were. He was told that white ladies wore them beneath their skirts. Mr. Moore showed him how they were fastened around the waist. Charley wore an old cast-off plug hat, and a "G" string. He seemed delighted, with the hoops, said: "How much?" He was told the hoops would cost him \$3.50. "I take it." He then pointed to a large green umbrella and asked the price of it, and was told it also was \$3.50, and said, "I take it." Then, with the hoops fastened to his waist, and the umbrella hoisted over his head, he placed himself on dress parade for about four hours, much to the amusement of the whites and the delight of the other Indians.

Maricopa Wells was a place of much importance for many years. After the building of the Southern Pacific, it was a supply point for the Salt River Valley until the building of the Maricopa and Phoenix Railroad, when its glory departed. It is now only a mass of ruins, overgrown with mesquite and other desert plants.

## CHAPTER IV.

### SETTLEMENT OF THE SALT RIVER VALLEY.

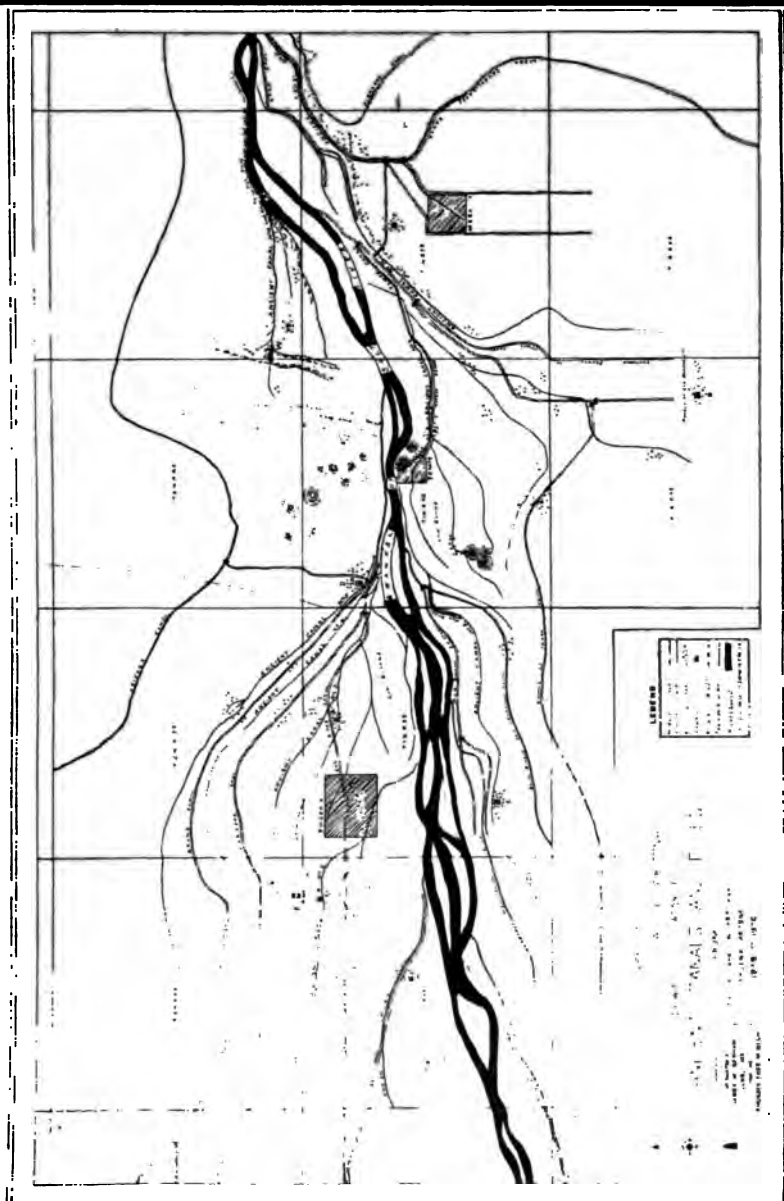
DESCRIPTION OF VALLEY—ANCIENT RUINS AND CANALS—ADVENT OF THE SWILLING PARTY—ORGANIZATION OF THE SWILLING IRRIGATING CANAL COMPANY—TAKING OUT OF CANALS AND PLACING LAND UNDER CULTIVATION—BIOGRAPHY OF "DARRELL DUPPA" WHO NAMED PHOENIX—DESCRIPTION OF DUPPA'S AGUA FRIA STATION—KILLING OF JAMES NELSON BY "JIM" SMITH—JOHN LARSEN—THOMAS J. L. HOAGUE—FRANK METZLER—JACOB DENSLING—TOM MCGOLDRICK—OTHER EARLY SETTLERS—EARLY WATER CLAIMS—"THE PHOENIX DITCH COMPANY"—"SALT RIVER DITCH COMPANY"—"PRESCOTT DITCH COMPANY"—"HAYDEN MILLING AND FARMING DITCH COMPANY"—"VIRGINIA FARMING DITCH COMPANY"—"SALT RIVER FARMING DITCH COMPANY"—"MONTEREY DITCH COMPANY"—THOSE WHO FOLLOWED THE SWILLING PARTY—FIRST FLOURING MILLS IN THE SALT RIVER VALLEY.

After the location of the capital at Prescott, a journey was made from the capital to Wickenburg and thence across what is known as the Salt River Valley to the Pima and Maricopa Indian Villages. This valley is about fifty miles in length east and west, and fifteen miles wide from north to south, containing approximately seven hundred and fifty square miles, and over four hundred thousand acres of land, with the Salt River running through it, near

the center of the valley; a sparkling stream the year round, its banks fringed with cottonwood and willow; the land level and susceptible of irrigation. The evidences of a prehistoric race were everywhere in evidence, small mounds scattered over the valley, which when uncovered, revealed what were formerly houses, made of sun dried brick, adobes. The traces of old canals were also to be seen. The map attached hereto, prepared by Herbert R. Patrick at a later date, gives approximately the courses of these canals. There was nothing at that time to break the solitude. The valley was covered with galleta grass, which was a most excellent fodder for stock.

In the spring of 1867, John Y. T. Smith had a contract to deliver hay to Fort McDowell, which had been established in 1865. He built the first house in the valley as a hay ranch, laid out a road through the valley to Fort McDowell, and had a few cattle grazing near his camp.

In September, 1867, John W. Swilling, whose name appears many times in this history, was travelling from Camp McDowell to Wickenburg, and stopped at Mr. Smith's hay camp for a few days. He was impressed with the many possibilities attending the irrigation of this fertile valley, which appeared almost level, with the waters of the Salt River flowing through it. It seemed an easy task to throw these waters over the fertile desert, which was all that was necessary to make this desert valley blossom as a rose. A market for all its products was assured, for grain, at that time, was brought in from Cali-





fornia and from Mexico at great expense in time and money.

The Vulture mine was producing well in gold, and was employing a large force, which with the military posts at McDowell and at Prescott, afforded a ready market for all that could be produced in the valley.

These facts impressed themselves upon the mind of Swilling, and, upon his return to Wickenburg, resulted in his organizing the Swilling Irrigating Canal Company, with a nominal capital of ten thousand dollars, consisting of fifty shares valued at \$200 each. Among those who became stockholders in the enterprise were Henry Wickenburg, the discoverer and owner of the Vulture mine, L. J. F. Jaeger, of Yuma, and one Latimer. Both the latter were engaged in hauling from the Vulture mine to the Hassayampa. The others who interested themselves with Swilling in this enterprise, were, for the most part poor men, with nothing but stout hearts and willing hands to forward the enterprise. Soon all preparations were completed and the company of hardy adventurers started from Wickenburg for their destination, on a winter's day in the early part of December, in the year 1867. The company was in command of the intrepid and optimistic Swilling, and was composed of the following individuals: Peter Barnes, — Chapman, Brian P. D. Duppa, Jacob Denslinger, Thomas J. L. Hoague, James Lee, John Larsen, Frank S. Metzler, Thomas McWilliams, Thomas McGoldrick, Michael McGrath, Antonio Moreas, James

1



Smith, John W. Swilling, Lodovick Vandermark, P. L. Walters, and Joseph Woods.

These were the pioneers who first entered the valley of the Salt River, whose soil is of the richest and most productive to be found in the great southwest. They laid the foundation of the agricultural community which they called Phoenix, since it was evident from its surroundings that it was being built upon the ashes of a forgotten civilization.

Upon reaching their journey's end, a place was selected for the head of the proposed ditch on the north bank of the river, nearly opposite the site of Tempe. Here, in the early part of December, 1867, the Swilling party started work with a will, but after spending about \$500 in construction work, found it necessary to cut through solid rock, which could only be done at a very heavy expenditure of time and labor, consequently this first location was abandoned and a new head started several miles down the river and close to the spot where John Y. T. Smith had previously located his hay camp. This second location proved to be in every way successful.

In a few months quite a stretch of canal was completed, which was known, locally, as the Swilling Ditch, with a rock and brush dam across the channel of the river to divert the water into the ditch. This rock and brush dam was only temporary and cheaply constructed since every rise in the river washed it away and it had to be replaced. This ditch, afterwards known as the Salt River Canal, according to the

"Miner" was intended to be from ten to twelve miles in length.

In the early part of 1868 ground was prepared for cultivation, and water for irrigation was ready about March of that year, enabling a few of the settlers to harvest small crops of corn and barley during the summer. According to James M. Barney, the first fields to be put in cultivation were owned by Charles L. Adams and "Frenchy" Sawyer, the former having, some years before, been the founder of a flourishing little settlement near the Gila River, called Adamsville.

The first crops proved the fertility of the soil, and quickly the news spread to other parts of the Territory that the Salt River Valley offered inviting opportunities to the farmer and home builder, and many emigrants were soon headed that way.

With an abundant supply of water at hand the land placed under cultivation increased rapidly. Within a short time after the first settlement, here was located the largest and most promising agricultural community in the Territory, a veritable oasis in the desert.

A biographical sketch of John W. Swilling has been given in a previous volume of this history, but it might not be amiss to give a short sketch of other members of this pioneer party, the most of which is gathered from information given me by James M. Barney of the Surveyor General's office at Phoenix, who has been very industrious in gathering data concerning this valley and the Territory for many years:

To Brian P. D. Duppa, known to old timers as Darrell Duppa, a prominent member of the Swilling party, belongs the honor of suggesting the name of "Phoenix" for the settlement.

Duppa was an Englishman of good family and scholarly attainments, and had come to Arizona at an early day, about 1863, from California.

Regarding the name of the Salt River settlement, and casting at the same time a horoscope of its future, Sylvester Mowry, wrote as follows in October of 1870:

"The man who first named the present settlement did so with a last gasp at his classics, calling it 'Phoenix,' and did well in so doing. To-day's civilization rises from the ashes of the past. It is doubtful if the new will surpass the old masonry, water ditches or pottery, but it will infinitely go beyond it in production, in refinement, in the useful arts, in population, and in the space that it will fill in the history of Arizona and that of the American continent."

Herbert R. Patrick, of Phoenix, gives the following personal description of Darrell Duppa.

"Duppa, like most men of his race, was tall and inclined to slenderness, had thin features, a rather poor complexion, while he wore his hair, which was inclined to curl, somewhat long."

But little is known of Duppa's early history, although it is said by Mr. John McDerwin, in 1914 a resident of Mohave County and at one time among Duppa's intimate friends, "that the latter was the son of an English nobleman and, at an early day had entered the English army, reaching the rank of Colonel

in that organization; that while still occupying this rank he had trouble with a brother officer of the same grade, which resulted in a duel, his opponent being killed; that Colonel Duppa then resigned his military commission and left his native land, finally coming to America; that his relatives and friends later made every effort they could to induce him to return to the homeland, without success; that he was what is commonly called a 'remittance man,' receiving from England the sum of \$3,000 every four months through Dr. O. J. Thibodo, at one time a practicing physician and druggist of Phoenix."

Like most of the early residents of Arizona, Duppa was somewhat extravagant in his habits, and oftentimes, it is said, his rather large remittance was spent long before it reached him.

Coming with the first settlers, Duppa squatted upon a piece of land in the valley, and farmed it for several seasons. On February 1st, 1871, he settled on the quarter section immediately to the west of Jake Starar's place, which he afterwards sold to John B. Montgomery, and it was later known as Montgomery's addition to the city of Phoenix.

He next conducted what was called the "Agua Fria Station" on the Phoenix—Wickenburg road, which was known to travellers for its good appointments. Here he had much trouble with roving bands of hostile Indians and once, in March, 1872, when out cutting hay at some distance from the station with one of his Mexican helpers, they were attacked by a band of fourteen savages, and in the fight which followed Duppa was wounded in the leg. In John G.

Bourke's "On the Border with Crook," is found the following description of Duppa's Agua Fria Station:

"The antipodes of Townsend's rancho, as its proprietor was the antipodes of Townsend himself, was the 'station' of Darrell Duppa at the 'sink' of the same Agua Fria, some fifty miles below. Darrell Duppa was one of the queerest specimens of humanity, as his ranch was one of the queerest examples to be found in Arizona, and I might add, in New Mexico and Sonora as well. There was nothing superfluous about Duppa in the way of flesh, neither was there anything about the station that could be regarded as superfluous, either in furniture or ornament. Duppa was credited with being the wild, harum-scarum son of an English family of respectability, his father having occupied a position in the diplomatic or consular service of Great Britain, and the son having been born in Marseilles. Rumor had it that Duppa spoke several languages, French, Spanish, Italian and German; that he understood the classics, and that, when sober, he used faultless English. I can certify to his employment of excellent French and Spanish, and what had to my ears the sound of pretty good Italian, and I know, too, that he was hospitable to a fault, and not afraid of man or devil. Three bullet wounds, received in three different fights with the Apaches, attested his grit, although they might not be accepted as equally conclusive evidence of good judgment. The site of his 'location' was in the midst of the most uncompromising piece of desert in a region which boasts of possessing

more desert land than any other territory in the Union. The surrounding hills and mesas yielded a perennial crop of cacti, and little of anything else. The dwelling itself was nothing but a 'ramada'; a term which has already been defined as a roof of branches; the walls were of rough, unplastered wattle work, of the thorny branches of the ironwood, no thicker than a man's finger, which was lashed by thongs of rawhide to horizontal slats of cottonwood; the floor of the bare earth, of course, that almost went without saying in those days, and the furniture rather too simple and meagre, even for Carthusians. As I recall the place to mind, there appears the long unpainted table of pine, which served for meals or gambling, or the rare occasion when anyone took into his head the notion to write a letter. This room constituted the ranch in its entirety. Along the sides were scattered piles of blankets, which, about midnight, were spread out as couches for tired laborers or travellers. At one extremity a meagre array of Dutch ovens, flat irons and frying pans revealed the 'kitchen' presided over by a hirsute, husky voiced gnome, half Vulcan, half centaur, who, immersed for most of the day in the mysteries of the larder, at stated intervals broke the silence with the hoarse command: 'Hash pile, come a runnin.' There is hardly any use to describe the rifles, pistols, belts of ammunition, saddles, spurs, and whips, which lined the walls and covered the joists and cross beams; they were just as much part and parcel of the establishment as the dogs and ponies were. To keep out the sand laden wind, which blew fiercely down from the

north, when it wasn't blowing down with equal fierceness from the south or the west, or the east, strips of canvas or gunny sacking were tacked on the inner side of the cactus branches. My first visit to this Elysium was made about midnight, and I remember that the meal served up was unique, if not absolutely paralyzing on the score of originality. There was a great plenty of Mexican figs in rawhide sacks, fairly good tea, which had the one great merit of hotness, and lots and lots of whisky; but there was no bread, as the supply of flour had run short, and, on account of the appearance of Apaches during the past few days, it had not been considered wise to send a party over to Phoenix for replenishment. A wounded Mexican, lying down in one corner, was proof that the story was well founded. All the light in the ranch was afforded by a single stable lantern, by the flickering flames from the cook's stove, and the glinting stars. In our saddlebags we had several slices of bacon and some biscuits, so we did not fare half so badly as we might have done. What caused me most wonder was why Duppa had ever concluded to live in such a forlorn spot; the best answer I could get to my queries was that the Apaches had attacked him at the moment he was approaching the banks of the Agua Fria at this point, and after he had repulsed them, he thought he would stay there merely to let them know he could do it. This explanation was satisfactory to everyone else, and I had to accept it."

Later Duppa made his home in Phoenix, where he passed away in the later 80's and was

buried in the Odd Fellows' Cemetery in the southwestern part of the city.

While a resident of this city much of his private business was supervised by Captain Hancock, who acted as his legal adviser under an agreement dated October 28th, 1877. In this agreement the party of the first part appears as "Darrell Duppa, Holsingbourne House, County of Kent, England." In 1910 a number of the old settlers of this vicinity realizing the part that Duppa had played in the early settlement of the valley, erected a small and simple monument at the head of his grave to mark his last resting place.

He took an active part in the selection of the "Phoenix Townsite," and at the mass meeting of October 20th, 1870, was chosen a member of the committee which decided upon the location and name of the townsite.

Duppa, unlike the majority of his transplanted countrymen, became thoroughly American and was permeated with the "spirit of the west," being fearless, just and generous, and entirely free from the arrogant and bullying instincts of the average Englishman.

The following by A. F. Banta on the early life of Darrell Duppa, appeared in "Dunbar's Weekly," of April 18th, 1914.

"The late 'Lord Duppa,' as he was commonly known, was the most scholarly man in the Territory of Arizona. He was a linguist and could read readily the ancient classics in the original, besides several of the modern languages. At one time he possessed well worn copies of Juvenal, Ovid, Homer, etc., in the original, but



of modern poets, Shakespeare was his favorite. Of this great work he seemed to have committed the whole to memory, for he would often recite for hours from this author's work. At one time 'Lord Duppa' had a cabin on the *Agua Fria*, in which he lived alone. One night, while conversing with the writer, Duppa dropped into a reminiscent mood, and gave to the writer a detailed account of his wanderings from the time he left England down to his advent into Arizona in 1863. He left England in his teens, going first to Paris, where he graduated from one of the highest institutions of learning. From Paris he went to Madrid, Spain, and there he also graduated, but possessing little physical resemblance to an Englishman, he readily passed for a Frenchman in France, or a Spaniard in Spain, and from Spain he took ship on a sailing vessel for Valparaiso, South America, but nearing that port a fearful storm struck the vessel, which was wrecked and every soul aboard drowned but Duppa. After his miraculous escape from drowning Duppa wandered over the greater part of South America, where at all times, he was considered by the natives to be a Spaniard. Leaving South America he went to New Zealand, and after a time to Australia, thence to California, and, finally, to Arizona, where he died. In answer to a question by the writer: 'Why don't you go back to the old country?' he replied by saying: 'It is useless at this time of life. To do so would require a radical change in my life, and I have lived so many years on the frontiers of civilization that I now have no desire to again assume the life and the attend-

ant responsibilities which would fall to my lot should I return to England.' "

"Jim" Smith, another member of the Swilling Party, was the first to shed human blood in the settlement when, on the 2nd day of August, 1869, he shot to death another settler by the name of James Nelson. After the committal of this crime, Smith fled to the northern part of the county where, it was thought he joined a renegade band of Indians. He was never brought to justice for his bloody deed. A few days after the murder, on August 7th, the "Miner" had the following:

"Jim Smith—We have been told that Jim Smith, who shot and killed James Nelson at Phoenix, on the 2nd inst. was seen at Walnut Grove recently. If Smith is still in the county or Territory, he ought to be arrested."

Over a year later, on December 3rd, 1870, the following item in reference to Smith is found in the "Miner":

"A white man, supposed to be the murderer, Jim Smith, visited Davis's ranch on the upper Hassayampa a short time ago, and informed the man on the place that he had not eaten anything for three days. Not having much provisions cooked, the ranchman asked his visitor to wait awhile and he would get him a good meal. The latter replied that he could not wait, but would take a piece of bread and meat. Upon receiving these he immediately left. The fellow was dressed in buckskin, had a Henry rifle, and his description answered to that of the murderer, Jim Smith. Shortly after this transpired, the

ranchman followed his visitor's tracks a short distance until they joined with tracks made by a party of Indians, who, no doubt, accompanied the white scoundrel."

John Larsen, a citizen of Swedish descent, was the first member of the Swilling Party to permanently settle upon a homestead claim, taking up his residence the 24th day of February, 1868, on the northeast quarter of Section 11, Township 1, North, Range 3 East.

Thomas J. L. Hoague, called "John" Hoague, for short, was the first notary public to be appointed for the Phoenix Settlement, Gov. Richard C. McCormick signing his commission on the 25th day of May, 1868, less than six months after the coming of the Swilling Party. Hoague was among the first to start building a habitation in the valley, and by April of 1868, had erected two small houses in the centre of the settlement.

Frank Metzler, Jacob Densling and Tom McGoldrick continued to reside in the valley for a number of years after the first settlement, all being interested in farming. The latter, before joining the Swilling Party, had been well known around the Prescott country, where he had lived for some time. In the little adobe store of Heyman Menassee, on East Washington street, in 1872, McGoldrick saved the life of Dan Twomey, who later fell a victim to Apache treachery near Camp McDowell. Twomey and Mike Connell had met in Menassee's store, and, angry words passing between them, Connell drew his pistol and pointed it at Twomey's head. McGoldrick was standing near, and, just as Connell pressed the trigger of his weapon, the former knocked

---

his arm upward, and the bullet passed just above his intended victim's head. Before a second shot could be fired, Connell was disarmed and taken before a Justice, where the matter was amicably settled by the shooter giving a bond to keep the peace in the future.

Tom McWilliams, who was an old pioneer of the Territory did not remain long in the valley, selling out his interests here about the middle of 1869. He then went to the vicinity of Gila Bend, where he engaged in digging a well on the Arizona City-Tucson stage road, on the dry and barren stretch of that highway between the Bend and Maricopa Wells. This venture did not prove very successful, however, and from there he went to the Hassayampa, some ten miles below Wickenburg, where, for a time, he conducted what was known as McWilliams' Station, and cultivated quite an acreage of ground. From the latter place he removed to Camp Goodwin. He was appointed postmaster of that post in March of 1875. Not long afterwards he passed away, being succeeded in office by H. E. Lacy.

Jack Walters, upon first coming to the West, had settled in California, where he engaged in placer mining with indifferent success. Hearing of rich mineral discoveries in Arizona, he turned his steps hither, and was around Walnut Grove and Wickenburg at an early day. Like all the pioneers he was a man of great liberality, always fair and honest, and old age found him without resources. He lived for many years at the ranch of his former partner, Johnny George, who died a number of years before him, and later

made his home with William Gilson, a pioneer of the Walnut Grove country, who owned a ranch on the Tempe road, and erected in Phoenix the building still standing on the north east corner of Washington and Second Streets. In the county election of 1872, Walters was nominated for District Attorney by the Democrats and defeated his opponent, Captain Hancock, by a vote of 344 to 165. Soon after his election, however, he resigned the office and Captain Hancock was appointed by the Board of Supervisors to succeed him. He passed away in 1909, at the age of 85 years, being the last local survivor of the original Swilling Party.

Referring to the death of Mr. Walters, the "Arizona Republican" had the following:

"The funeral of 'Jack' Walters was held yesterday afternoon, (Nov. 24, 1909) the pall bearers being John P. Orme, Pierce W. Butler, Jake Miller, James H. McClintock, George Hamlin, and Ira M. Hoghe. He left no relatives here or elsewhere so far as is known. It is rather interesting to reflect on the personnel of those who served as pall bearers. It was desirable that 'Old Jack' should be laid at rest as nearly as possible by the survivors of the days of his activity, but it was found that there were not left within the community any available persons whose residence here was contemporaneous with his earlier years in the valley, beginning over forty years ago. Nevertheless, the past was quite well represented for the youngest of those who served, has been here probably fifteen years, while one of them has lived here for nearly forty years."

While some members of the Swilling party remained here to become permanent farmers in the valley, the greater number, being restless, roving spirits, left for other parts after a few years, and not much is known concerning them.

After the success of the Swilling Ditch, many water claims were posted along the river throughout the valley, a few of which were utilized. These claims were recorded at Prescott, the county seat. Among the very early appropriations of water along the Salt River are the following:

“NOTICE: To ALL Whom It May Concern:

“The undersigned, under the name and style of ‘The Phoenix Ditch Company,’ hereby gives notice that they have this day claimed five thousand (5,000) inches (to be measured under two inches pressure) of the waters of Salt River, to be taken from said river at a point about three-fourths of a mile above the head of the ditch owned and used by the Swilling Irrigating Canal Company, and immediately below the rocky point that there reaches to the river, which said location was selected by J. W. Swilling and Thomas Barnum, about one year ago. The undersigned also claim right of way for their irrigating ditch, along the line selected and cleared by said Swilling and Barnum, to the old acequia or ditch, sometimes called the Montezuma Ditch, and thence, along the centre of said old ditch, its whole length, claiming fifty feet on each side. And the said Phoenix Ditch Company give further notice that they

intend to commence work upon said ditch on or before the 10th day of August, 1870.

“J. W. SWILLING,

“THOMAS BARNUM,

“J. T. ALSAP,

“PHOENIX DITCH COMPANY.

“Phoenix, July 4, 1870.”

At a meeting of the Phoenix Ditch Company, held August 11, 1870, John Smith and A. Barnett, were admitted to shares, and it was agreed to claim 5,000 inches of water additional to that already claimed. And it was ordered that notice thereof be given by publication in the “Arizona Miner.” J. T. Alsap, Secretary.

“NOTICE: To ALL Whom It May Concern:

“The undersigned, under the name and style of the Salt River Ditch Company, hereby give notice that they have this day claimed forty thousand inches, to be measured under two inches pressure, of the waters of Salt River, to be taken from said river at a point about five miles above the crossing of the McDowell and Florence road, on said river, and opposite a red mountain, on the south side of said river. We also claim the right of way for said ditch to a point opposite the middle of the north side of the Little Maricopa Mountain. We also claim one hundred feet on each side of said ditch, and the entire length of said ditch.

“And the said Salt River Ditch Company further gives notice that they intend to commence work on the said ditch on or before the

25th day of December, A. D. 1870. Said ditch to run on the south side of said river.

"N. L. GRIFFIN,  
"CALVIN JACKSON,  
"JOHN WASSON,  
"JACOB MILLER,  
"JESSE JACKSON,  
"S. JACKSON,  
"JOS. W. KNOTT,  
"A. B. SMITH,  
"A. P. K. SAFFORD,  
"S. SHOUP,  
"C. A. LUKE,  
"B. C. BAIN.

"Salt River, A. T., August 22nd, 1870."

**"PRESCOTT DITCH COMPANY:**

**"To ALL Whom It may Concern:**

"The undersigned, under the name and style of the 'Prescott Ditch Company,' hereby give notice that they have, this day, located a water ditch and claimed four thousand (4,000) inches of the waters of Salt River, for irrigating purposes, to be taken out on the south side of said river in Section 20, Township 1 North, Range 3 east.

"Five hundred yards of said ditch is now completed, and four thousand (4,000) inches of water, more or less, running in the same. We intend to run our ditch in a southwest direction



as fast as possible, and as far as we deem it necessary for farming purposes.

“Claimants:

“J. A. CHENOWITH,

“C. P. CROWLEY,

“V. A. STEPHENS,

“JOHN H. WISS,

“N. M. BROADWAY,

“W. SANDERSON,

“J. M. WILSON,

“W. BRECHT.

“Salt River, Yavapai County, Arizona, Sept. 26, 1870.”

“NOTICE: To ALL Whom It may Concern:

“The undersigned, under the name and style of the Hayden Milling and Farming Ditch Company, hereby give notice that they have this day claimed ten thousand (10,000) inches, to be measured under two inches pressure, of the waters of Salt River, to be taken from said river at or near a butte, to the left of the main road to the Gila River from Phoenix, and on the south side of said river.

“And the said Hayden Milling and Farming Ditch Company are at work on the same.

“CHAS. T. HAYDEN,

“A. W. FIELDS,

“ROBERT LAVERY,

“W. M. GARRETT,

“W. R. BROWN.

“Phoenix, A. T., Nov. 17, 1870.”

**"VIRGINIA DITCH COMPANY:**

**"To ALL Whom It may Concern:**

"The undersigned, under the name and style of the Virginia Farming Ditch Company, hereby give notice that they have this day claimed ten thousand (10,000) inches, to be measured under two inches pressure, of the waters of Salt River. The water to be taken from said River about two and a half miles above the Prescott Ditch Company, on the south side of the said river. And the said Virginia Farming Ditch Company will commence work on the same on the first day of March, A. D. 1871.

"B. F. RIGGS,  
"C. F. CATE,  
"C. P. WOODCOCK,  
"G. A. HAMMONDS,  
"J. A. CHENOWITH,  
"N. M. BROADWAY,  
"V. A. STEPHENS,  
"WM. LA FORCE.

"Phoenix, A. T., Dec. 21, 1870."

**"NOTICE: To ALL Whom It may Concern:**

"The undersigned, under the name and style of the 'Salt River Farming Ditch Company' hereby give notice that they have this day claimed fifteen thousand (15,000) inches, to be measured under two inches pressure, of the water of Salt River, to be taken from said river in township 1 North, Range 2 East, Sec. 23, on the north side of said river, and the said Salt River Farming Ditch Company further give

notice that they intend to commence work on the same on the first day of February, A. D. 1871.

“J. A. CHENOWITH,  
“C. F. CATE,  
“A. B. SARRELLO,  
“A. H. PEEPLES,  
“J. M. BRYAN,  
“N. M. BROADWAY,  
“B. T. RIGGS,  
“J. A. YOUNG,  
“JOSEPH PHY (FYE),  
“GEORGE BRYAN,  
“J. McMULLEN.

“Phoenix, A. T., Jan. 1st, 1871.”

“NOTICE: To ALL Whom It may Concern:

“The undersigned, under the name and style of the Monterey Ditch Company, hereby give notice that they have this day claimed ten thousand (10,000) inches, to be measured under two inches pressure, of the waters of Salt River; to be taken from said river at a point near the southeast corner of Section twenty-three (23), Township one (1) North, Range two (2) East, and thence running down a ravine in a westerly direction 600 yards, and thence in a northwesterly direction to the northwest corner of section 16, township 1 north, range 2 east. The undersigned also claim the right of way for their irrigating ditch on the line selected and cleared by said company, claiming fifty feet on each side for its entire length. And the said Monterey Ditch Company give further notice that they

intend to commence work on the said ditch on or before January 20th, 1871.

"J. M. HENDERSON,

"J. BOYD,

"T. McPHERSON,

"E. E. HELLINGS,

"A. FAULKNER,

"E. K. BUKER,

"G. FORSEE,

"J. E. FOUTS,

"D. HAMILTON.

"Phoenix, A. T., Jan. 7, 1871."

As has been heretofore noted, the price of all food products for both man and beast were what would now be considered exorbitant, and, taking advantage of this condition, it is not surprising that the Salt River Valley received rapid accession to its population upon the proven success of the Swilling Ditch. Among those who followed the Swilling Party at an early date were the following:

Charles Adams, who several years before founded the village of Adamsville on the Gila.

John T. Alsap, who was the first Territorial Treasurer of Arizona; the first Probate Judge of Maricopa County; the first mayor of the city of Phoenix, and four times member of the Arizona Legislature, twice from Yavapai County, and twice from Maricopa County, being President of the Council in the 5th, and Speaker of the House in the 18th Legislative Sessions.

John Ammerman, known to his contemporaries as "Pumphandle John."

Thomas Barnum, who was the first elected sheriff of Maricopa County.

George W. Buck, whose homestead claim is now known as "Neahr's Addition to Phoenix."

James M. Buck.

Noah M. Broadway, who served a term as county sheriff.

Edward K. Buker, the first postmaster of Mill City or East Phoenix.

John Brannaman.

John Boyd.

William Brecht, an old time resident of Wickburg, and later, of Prescott.

Aaron Barnett and Benjamin Block, early residents and merchants of the Valley.

Michael Connell.

David Cottrell.

David Cooley.

Cromwell A. Carpenter.

Morton Collins.

Jeremiah Caveness.

John T. Dennis, whose ranch is now the Dennis Addition to Phoenix.

James W. Davis.

George W. Donnelly.

Charles Davies, whose son, Walter J., was among the first white children to be born in the Valley.

William K. Elliott.

James M. Elliott.

R. H. Elliott.

William D. Fenter, whose daughter was among the first white children born in the town of Phoenix.

George W. Forsee.

---

William W. Ford.

George W. Fuson.

Columbus H. Gray, who was appointed a member of the first Board of Supervisors by Governor Safford.

Hosea G. Greenhaw, who settled in this Valley in 1868, coming from Arkansas.

Benjamin F. Griffin, who came to the Valley in 1870, and was a son-in-law of William P. Murray. He came from Texas and was murdered by Mexican bandits in February of 1873, while on his way to Florence for the purpose of disposing of his crop.

Martin P. Griffin, who, by appointment of Governor Safford was a member and chairman of the first Board of Supervisors.

Edwin W. Grover, who, in September of 1872, was shot to death by William B. Hellings, at Prescott.

John J. Gardiner, later a wealthy resident of Phoenix.

Alexander Groves, an early preacher of the Gospel in this section.

Milton B. Growl.

William B. Hellings, who came to the Valley from Camp McDowell and erected the Hellings Flouring Mill.

Eli Taylor Hargrave.

William A. Hancock, who erected the first building on the Phoenix Townsite, and was, by appointment of Governor Safford, the first county sheriff.

Charles T. Hayden, the father of Congressman Carl Hayden, and himself a candidate for Territorial Delegate to Congress in 1874.

John J. Hill, the first postmaster of Hayden's Ferry.

James P. (Pete) Holcomb, the first butcher of Phoenix, and member of the 12th Territorial Legislature from Maricopa county.

George W. Holmes.

Edward E. Hellings, a member of the once flourishing mercantile establishment of William B. Hellings & Co., of Mill City.

William A. Holmes who was called by his associates "Hunkadora" and who came to the valley from Texas with the Keener Party.

Christopher C. N. Hiltibrand.

William H. Kirkland, who came to Arizona from California in 1855, and visited Tucson for the first time on January 17th, 1856.

Benjamin W. Kellogg.

Abraham B. Liles.

James D. Monihon, who came to Arizona with the California Volunteers, and served one term as Mayor of Phoenix.

James F. Murray.

Mark Morris.

William P. Murray, who came to the Valley from North Carolina in 1870. His daughters all married well-known residents of this vicinity, one becoming the wife of George W. Buck, another of John A. Chenowith, another of John T. Alsap, another of William L. Osborn, still another of R. L. Rosson, while a sixth sister became the wife of Neri F. Osborn.

James Murphy, who started the first store in the Valley and whose homestead is now designated as Murphy's Addition to Phoenix.

James B. McKinnie, who is credited with selling the first whisky ever retailed in the Salt River Valley.

William W. Morrell.

James L. Mercer, appointed by Governor Safford the first recorder of the county.

Winchester Miller, during his lifetime a prominent citizen of the "South Side."

Matthew R. Morrell.

John B. Montgomery, who was the first "outsider" to reach the Valley after the arrival of the Swilling Party.

John Moon.

William Miller.

Lindley H. Orme, who came to the Valley from California in 1870, and was a brother of John P. Orme, who came to this section from the Golden State in March of 1877, and of Henry C. Orme, who came here from Texas in 1879. Lindley H. Orme was sheriff of Maricopa County for eight years, and a member of the Territorial Council which secured the removal of the Capital from Prescott to Phoenix. He passed away on September 24th, 1900.

Peter Nelson, who is still a resident of the Valley.

William L. Osborn, who left Prescott for the Salt River Valley on June 8th, 1869, and still resides there.

John P. Osborn, who reached Prescott in 1864, and left that place for the Salt River Valley with his family on January 24th, 1870.

Benjamin F. Patterson, whose daughter christened "Arizona," is said to have been the



first white child to be born in the Salt River Valley.

Charles R. Perkins.

Niels Peterson, who came to this Valley in 1871, and settled near Tempe.

John Y. Parker.

William Parker.

James Parker, the second master of the Phoenix Public Schools.

George R. Roberts, brother in law of A. N. Peeples of Wickenburg.

Thomas D. Roper.

Moritz Rohling.

John Roach, the pioneer saloon-keeper of Phoenix.

John A. Rush, afterwards a candidate for Delegate to Congress from Arizona.

J. Direly Rumberg, who once owned the corner where the Ford Hotel now stands.

David Shultis, who was an unsuccessful candidate for Sheriff in the county election of 1872.

Richard Stinson, who was, by appointment of Governor Safford, the first District Attorney of Maricopa County.

Francis A. Shaw, who was appointed by Governor Safford a member of the first Board of Supervisors of Maricopa County.

John B. Summers.

Byron W. Smith.

Varney A. Stevens (Stephens), who came to the Valley from Prescott.

Thomas Shortell.

Stephen S. Strode.

James F. Storey.

Nathaniel Sharp, an early resident of the "South Side."

Bannajah H. Stone.

Benjamin Simmons.

Andrew and Jacob Starar, who had been drifting around the mining camps of the west for some years before coming to Phoenix.

"Frenchy" Sawyer, who raised the first crop of barley in the valley.

Alhira B. Sorrells.

Daniel Twomey, who was killed by Tonto, Apaches near Camp McDowell on April 15th, 1874.

Henry Tippet.

John Underwood, the first valley settler to be slain by the Apaches.

James Vader, who on April 3rd, 1874, lost three thousand pounds of flour and three thousand pounds of barley in attempting to ford Salt River when at flood.

Thomas C. Worden, who succeeded Tom Barnum as County Sheriff in the fall of 1871.

Gordon A. Wilson, who was a member of the House of Representatives from Yavapai County in the 5th and 6th Territorial Legislatures, and whose ranch was located on the north side of the Salt River near what is now known as Wilson's Crossing.

George W. Williams, who was known as "Old George" and who was elected Public Administrator of the county on November 5th, 1872.

Kinsey Watson.

Andrew White.

James A. Young, known as "Coho" and an early Justice of the Peace of Phoenix Precinct.

John A. Young, who was elected both Supervisor and Justice of the Peace at the special election of May 1st, 1871.

Edwin A. Yerkes, at one time chief clerk for the old firm of William B. Hellings & Co., at Mill City.

Many of these settlers were not permanent in the community where they lived, but were identified with the State builders who laid the foundation for the future commonwealth of Arizona.

In the raising of the first crops in the Salt River Valley, eight thousand acres of land were placed under cultivation.

W. B. Hellings & Co., erected in the year 1871 their flouring mill in what was then known as Mill City, the ruins of which now remain just east of the State Insane Asylum near Phoenix. Bichard & Company erected a flouring mill in Phoenix, which was destroyed by fire, supposed to have been of incendiary origin in the year 1871.

## CHAPTER V.

## EARLY SETTLEMENTS—PHOENIX AND VICINITY.

LOCATION OF PHOENIX TOWNSITE—EAST PHOENIX—FIRST COUNTY ELECTION—WEST PHOENIX CHOSEN—EARLY SETTLERS—SALE OF TOWN LOTS—HAYDEN'S FERRY, NOW TEMPE—CHARLES TRUMBULL HAYDEN'S EXPERIENCE AS FIRST PROBATE JUDGE IN TUCSON—WINCHESTER MILLER—HIS EXPERIENCES WITH INDIANS AND RENEGADES—HISTORY OF TEMPE—EARLY SETTLERS—JAMES T. PRIEST—NIELS PETERSON—NAMING OF PHOENIX AND TEMPE—STORY BY MAJ. BEN C. TRUMAN—ESTIMATE OF ARABLE LAND IN TERRITORY—LAND UNDER CULTIVATION—MAIZE AND WHEAT RAISED IN 1867—PRICES PAID BY GOVERNMENT FOR PRODUCE.

According to Mr. Neri Osborn, the Phoenix Townsite was located in the following manner:

“Bill Osborn and Barnum took out a ditch in 1868, and afterwards took out the ditch known as the Salt River Canal north of Phoenix, which irrigated some of this land from the north, that is, where the present site of the city is. They took the ditch out, but Barnett & Block farmed the land, where the town was first located, at East Phoenix, or Mill City. A man by the name of McKinnie owned it. There were some old ruins there, and McKinnie and Alvaney built a building there, a two-room building, and

started a saloon and a small eating-house. Old Tom Farley used to run a restaurant there in 1870, and Hancock and Mowry came down from Fort McDowell and started to build a town there. The old foundations are there yet, and Johnnie Moore owned the place right west at the time. He wanted to give them forty acres for a townsite, but father (John P. Osborn), always contended that forty acres was not enough, and told them that three hundred and twenty acres should be set aside for the townsite. In the fall of 1870 a meeting had been called at the foundation of a store which had been laid one and one-half miles east of Phoenix by Jim McKinnie, John Alvaney and Captain Hancock. The meeting was called for a certain Saturday. On the Friday preceding the called meeting, father and I visited the present site of Phoenix to get a load of wood. We found two men quarreling over the quarter section which lies directly east of Center Street. Father asked the men why one did not take the quarter in dispute, and the other the quarter adjoining to the west. This proposition was refused by both, and it occurred to father that the two quarter sections would make an excellent townsite, and, after a little coaxing, the parties to the dispute agreed to quit claim their right, title and interest to the quarter section upon the payment of twenty-five dollars to each on the following Monday. At the meeting, the following day, the fifty dollars was raised by popular subscription, and what is now the thickly settled portion of Phoenix, worth millions, was surrendered for a pittance. Mari-

copa County had not yet been organized. It was a part of Yavapai, and the Probate Judge of that county, transacted the necessary work to make the townsite transfer legal.

"W. B. Hellings located his store and mill on Section 1, because there he could get more ground. He bought in there and started the town which was called East Phoenix, put up a mill and a store, and said he was going to start a town there. Jack Swilling was interested in that section, and he worked very hard to have the county seat given to East Phoenix. At the first county election, in May, 1871, they nominated for sheriff from West Phoenix, Jim Favorite; and for sheriff from West Phoenix, J. G. Chenowith. They had two tickets, East Phoenix and West Phoenix. This election was for county officers. Jack Swilling was married to a Mexican woman, and he had control of the Mexicans, and there were more Mexicans than white men. John Dennis and some of the boys put up a job on Swilling, and switched tickets on him, and all the Mexicans voted for West Phoenix. This decided the election in favor of West Phoenix. The campaign was a bitter one, and toward its close Chenowith, candidate for sheriff of West Phoenix, and Favorite, candidate for sheriff of East Phoenix, quarreled, and Chenowith killed Favorite. Chenowith was acquitted but retired from the race. East Phoenix put up John Moore, and West Phoenix, Tom Barnum, and the latter became the first elected sheriff of Maricopa County. The first interment made in the city of Phoenix was that of a man 'who died with his boots on.' Captain

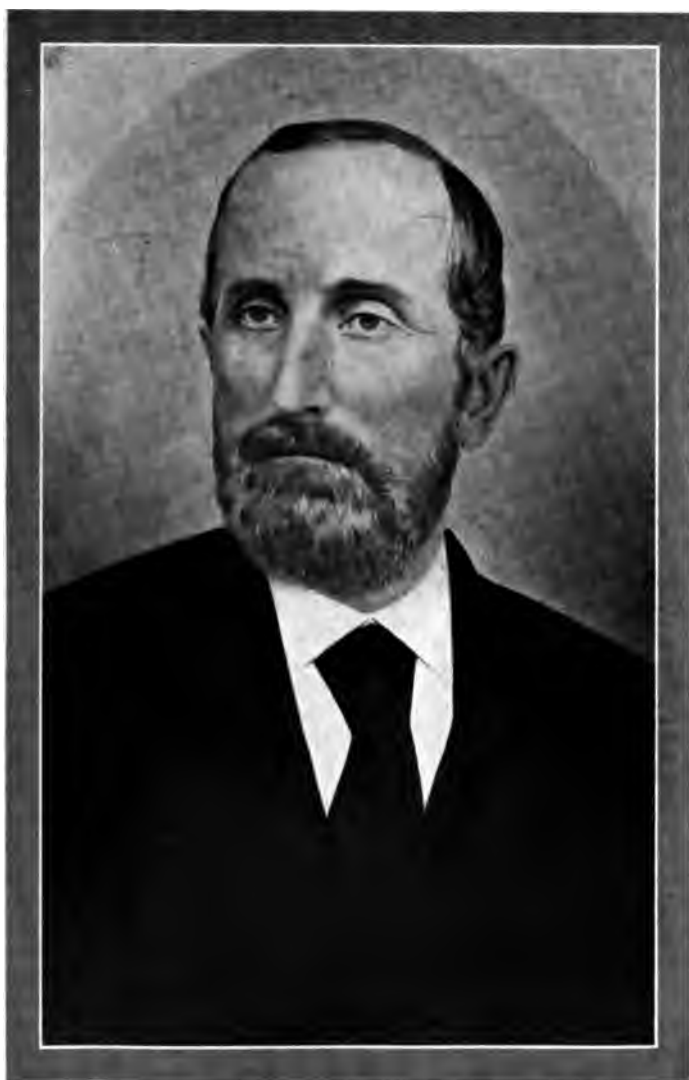
Hancock was the first sheriff, but he had been appointed to hold the office until the election was held.

"'Lum' Gray settled here in 1868. Ben Peterson and his wife came in at the same time; they came together, Mrs. Peterson and Mrs. Gray. I think they were the two first white women here. Barnum came at the same time that Peterson did. Mrs. Barnum, my sister, came in 1869, at the same time my father and Bill Osborn, Alsap, McKinnie, and others came in. That was in the spring of 1869. When I came in in 1869, there was 'Lum' Gray, his wife, Ben Peterson and wife, Rogers and wife, and Mrs. Barnum. They were the only white women in the valley; only four of them. Right after we came in, old 'Coho' Young and his family moved in. Then that fall the Murrays came; Old Man Murray and seven daughters; his wife was dead, and the daughters were all grown up."

After the purchase of the two quarter sections of land for the townsite of Phoenix, Captain Hancock surveyed the land, the town was laid off, divided into blocks and lots, and the selling of the same commenced. The Prescott "Miner," in January, 1871, notes the sale of town lots in Phoenix in the preceding December, sixty-one lots being sold at an average price of forty-eight dollars each. Judge Berry, of Prescott, bought the first town lot, paying therefor the sum of one hundred and sixteen dollars. This property is now occupied by the Dorris Grocery Store on the southwest corner of First and Washington Streets. By this time, 1871,







CHARLES TRUMBULL HAYDEN.

there was quite a population around Phoenix, probably five hundred persons.

This was the beginning of a settlement in the deserts of Arizona which, at this writing, 1918, has developed into a city of 30,000 people, with all modern improvements, paved streets, electric lights, electric cars, large business houses, and banks with deposits aggregating over ten millions of dollars, in the heart of a valley where two hundred thousand acres of land are under cultivation, with annual products approximating twenty millions of dollars, and which is only the beginning of, perhaps, one of the richest and most prosperous communities under the American flag.

A settlement was also started on the south side of the river at what was then known as Hayden's Ferry. The first canal taken out there was projected by Swilling and his associates, and was completed about the year 1869. Charles Trumbull Hayden located there about the year 1870; also Captain Sharp, Winchester Miller, Niels Peterson, and other pioneers of the South Side.

Captain Sharp afterwards moved from Tempe to Alhambra, about three miles from Phoenix, where he died a few years ago. I have been unable to learn anything of his early life. I knew him personally, however. He was an industrious farmer and a good citizen.

Charles Trumbull Hayden, a biography of whom is given in Volume II, was the founder of Tempe, where his son, Carl Hayden, the first representative in Congress of the State of Arizona, was born. Mr. Hayden established the

first ferry there, and also the first mercantile business. He was known as the "Father of Tempe."

In a letter written by Charles Trumbull Hayden, under date of Feby. 8th, 1898, to Joseph Fish, Mr. Hayden, speaking of the time he was Probate Judge says:

"I was the first Probate Judge in Tucson, A. T., under the laws of New Mexico that were extended over this Territory on its formation. They gave the Probate Judge limited civil and criminal jurisdiction, and in the year I occupied the bench, there was no case of death, not a civil case, and only one criminal case before the court, and that crime was committed by a citizen of Sonora. The five hundred Mexicans that constituted nearly all of the population of Tucson, like the American population upon the very extreme frontier, settled their own disputes without the aid of the courts."

Winchester Miller, who was located at Tempe when Charles Trumbull Hayden arrived there, was, according to the Fish manuscript, a native of Ohio, coming to Arizona in 1870, and locating at Tempe, where he died in November, 1893. Of him it is said, in the Arizona "Republican" of Dec. 25th, 1901:

"The early settlers of Tempe in opening up this Territory were called upon not only to endure many hardships but face the greatest dangers as well. Perhaps one of the bravest and most respected of these old timers was Winchester Miller. Miller was a man possessed with a nerve of iron and did not know the meaning of fear. He used to relate an exciting

episode that occurred back in the 70's or thereabouts, when he held the office of sheriff. We give it herewith as he told it to a friend of his. It is claimed to be an absolute fact:

"In executing the duties of his office at one time it unfortunately became necessary for Winchester to hang two Indians. While undoubtedly it was an unpleasant job Miller went about the business and stretched the redskins' necks in the most approved fashion. When he had finished they were good Indians and all they needed was a pair of wings each.

"He was living on the ranch now owned by Mons Ellingson. One day not long after he had given the two Indians their quietus, as Miller was standing in the yard near his house, his quick eye noted rising in the distance a great cloud of dust rapidly approaching. It did not require a second glance for him to realize that a band of painted bloodthirsty savages were swooping down upon him to avenge the death of their two brethren. Stepping into his house the nervy pioneer took his rifle from its peg, buckled on two cartridge belts, stuck in a couple of six shooters and a knife, and returned to the yard. Fortunately there was a fence about his house, behind which he took his stand.

"All this took but a short time, but when Miller reached the fence the savages were in full view, coming pellmell, yelling in their eagerness and excitement in anticipation of plenty of loot, incendiarism and scalps. On they came, a horde of 250, not observing Winchester Miller behind the fence until they bumped up against the end of his gun. As soon as they were in

speaking distance Winchester bellowed at the top of his lungs, 'Now is a good time to begin the shooting!'

"The redskins were taken by surprise and halted in confusion a short distance away. Accustomed to fighting in ambush the boldness of the man disconcerted them. The moment one started forward he was met with the cold muzzle of Winchester's gun. He watched every move and instantly checked the slightest show of advance, meanwhile constantly pouring at them at the top of his voice a string of epithets defying them to advance. Drawing off to a safe distance they dismounted, formed a circle, seated Indian fashion, and held a powwow, or council of war.

"They had come fully prepared for butchery, carrying the different implements of battle known to savages—rifles, tomahawks, bows and arrows, spears, clubs, anything they could get hold of. The fierce tribal hatred of their race was boiling in their veins. The powwow was of short duration. They again decided the white man must die. Springing onto their ponies once more, they came howling toward the house.

"'G——d d——n you, come on, you dirty devils!' shouted old Winchester, at the top of his voice. 'I know you'll get me, but I'll fix a lot of you before you nail me!'

"The Indians stopped. One of them attempted to circle around to the rear of the house.

"'Get back there or I'll bore a hole through you,' shouted Winchester as he took aim at the savage.

“Another started to dismount from his pony, but in an instant he was an object of interest to Winchester’s gun. He concluded that his pony’s back was safer than the ground and crawled back. For two days and nights, strange as it may seem, Winchester Miller stood off the band of savages who had come there with the express purpose of scalping him, burning the building to the ground and carrying off all movable property. Miller stood at his post without food or water until finally the Indians dispersed, either through fear of admiration for the man’s dauntless courage.

“Ever afterwards both Indians and Mexicans held Winchester Miller in great respect.

“An illustration of his remarkable personality was given at one time in more recent years when a number of Indians and Mexicans had gathered near the old Hayden mill. They had imbibed too freely of a quantity of bad whisky; were fighting among themselves and had reached such a state of frenzy that they constituted a dangerous element to the community.

“An officer was dispatched to arrest them. Winchester was not sheriff then. The mob simply laughed at the officer and dared him to arrest them if he could. He returned and reported the state of affairs. Some one suggested, ‘Send for Winchester Miller.’

“No sooner said than done. Two or three went out to his house and explained the situation and asked him if he would not come down and see what he could do. ‘Sure,’ replied Winchester. Buckling on a six-shooter he set out

for the mill, As soon as he was near enough he bellowed at the top of his voice:

“‘Get out of here, you dirty devils!’

“Without waiting a second, upon recognizing his voice, the drunken mob scrambled and fell all over each other in their haste to get out of the way. By the time Winchester Miller had reached the spot not an Indian or Mexican was in sight.”

In the same paper is a short history of Tempe by Frederick C. Wright, Editor and Manager Tempe Department of the Arizona “Republican,” which I here reproduce:

“Tempe, a Greek word meaning ‘beautiful valley,’ is a town of about 1190 inhabitants situated on the south bank of the Salt River nine miles east and but a short distance south of Phoenix, the capital of Arizona Territory.

“It is beautifully located in the heart of the richest and most productive farming section in the Salt River valley.

“Just thirty years ago, in October, 1871, the first white man, Charles T. Hayden, located on the present site of the town of Tempe and took up a quarter section of land extending as far south as the present site of the post office. It was then called Hayden’s Ferry.

“At that time the country round about presented an unbroken expanse of desert waste and sage brush.

“It took the dauntless courage and untiring energy of a brave pioneer to cope with seemingly unsurmountable difficulties to reclaim and upbuild an arid waste such as these early settlers encountered.

"Mr. Hayden erected a small pole shanty about 14x16 feet, upon the spot now occupied by the old Hayden house. This shanty was used as a store and was the only structure in this locality for some time, with the exception of an old adobe building on section 17, built shortly after, on what was known as the Pacho ranch. It was built by a man named Mendosa.

"The Tempe Canal was constructed about 1869 by Jack Swilling, who organized a company for that purpose. He was also the leading spirit in the construction of the Swilling canal, later known as the Salt River canal.

"After Mr. Hayden the first settlers to locate here in the order of their arrival were: Captain Sharp, Winchester Miller, Mr. Vader, John J. Hill, Conrad Meyer, Charles Balzan, J. T. Priest, Niels Peterson, Bob Carley, Charles Beach and others. Nearly all these took up farms in the country near by and were the founders and organizers of the present rich farming section about Tempe.

"J. T. Priest located here in December, 1871, and went to work on the Kirkland and McKinney ditch. This ditch was completed in the winter of 1872 and the first grain crops were then planted. In 1873 C. T. Hayden planted the first crop of alfalfa this side of the river on the present site of the Arizona Mercantile Company's store.

"Farms were quickly taken up. In 1871 John J. Hill took a farm where the public school now stands. Carley and Beach located on section 8, where Joe Wallace now lives. Captain Sharp located upon the ranch now owned by



Wolf Sachs. In the fall of 1872 Niels Peterson located here and settled upon the ranch his partner, C. M. Hildebrand, had taken up in 1871, where Mr. Peterson now lives.

"In 1873 Mexican, or Old Town, was settled. A man by the name of Kirkland, who lived on the Winchester Miller place, organized an association known as the 'San Pueblo Town Association.' The first building in San Pueblo was built in 1873 by a man named Sontag, and was an adobe west of the church that now stands on the hill near the railroad.

"The first flour mill in the valley was the Hell-ing mill, later known as the Vail place. The mill was located just east of the present site of the insane asylum, between Tempe and Phoenix.

"The Hayden flour mill was at first but a small 'coffee-grinder' mill, located upon the present site. The present structure was completed in 1874. Flour was ground out by common mill stones, with a capacity of about 2,000 pounds of flour per day. The mill, run by water, from that day to this has been kept in motion with ten shares of the Kirkland and McKinney ditch, fifteen shares of which were owned by Mr. Hayden.

"A man by the name of Freeman settled upon eighty acres just south of Hayden's quarter section, beginning at Fifth Street. In 1872 J. T. Priest purchased this land and in 1875 sold it to Mr. Hayden."

According to the Fish manuscript, the James T. Priest mentioned in the foregoing was born in Canada September 19th, 1835. He came to Arizona in 1871 and became a permanent resi-

dent of the Salt River Valley. When the writer came into the valley in 1887, Mr. Priest was a prominent citizen of the South Side, and served for a number of terms as a member of the Board of Supervisors of Maricopa County. He was one of the leading Republicans of the county whose influence was always exercised in behalf of his party.

Niels Peterson, one of the early settlers on the south side of the Salt River, was born in Denmark on October 21st, 1845. He received a liberal education in the land of his birth, and at the age of sixteen entered upon a seafaring life, which took him to all parts of the world. In 1865 he came to the United States, and sailed out of the port of New York until 1869, when he returned to his native land. In 1870 he again came to the United States, and spent one year in California, from which place he came to Arizona in the summer of 1871, at once settling in what is now Tempe. Since that time he has been prominent in that section, and also in the affairs of the Territory, having, at different times, been president of the Farmers and Merchants' Bank at Tempe, treasurer of the Tempe Irrigating Canal Company, and a member of the eighteenth Territorial legislature. Mr. Peterson is the owner of a farm of twelve hundred and fifty acres of land, and of one of the finest residences and rural homes in the Salt River Valley. In addition to the offices held by Mr. Peterson enumerated above he has served as a member of the board of trustees of the school district of his neighborhood, and, during the eighties was elected a member of the Maricopa

county board of supervisors, upon the Democratic ticket, of which party he has always been a staunch adherent. He is a member and trustee of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and is a member of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows at Tempe.

Mr. Peterson has been twice married. His first wife was Isabel Dunphy, of Duluth, Minnesota, and his second Susanna Decker, of South Montrose, Pennsylvania.

Concerning the naming of Phoenix and Tempe, the following article appeared in 1910 in the "Arizona Republican":

"When A. K. Stacy of Phoenix was in California for a short stay lately, he spent a part of the time most pleasantly at Arrowhead Hot Springs, near San Bernardino, in company with Mr. and Mrs. George F. Gardiner the latter Mr. Stacy's daughter. While the springs were enjoyed for their beauty of environment and for the baths, one of the experiences that will live long in the memory of the visitors was meeting with Major Ben Truman, who is spending a part of the summer at Arrowhead with Mrs. Truman, who happens to be an aunt of Mrs. Frank Ainsworth of Phoenix.

"Though Major Truman had not stopped in the Territory for more than thirty years, he still claims to be an Arizonan by virtue of pioneer experiences. Mr. Stacy soon learned that Major Truman had been special agent of the post office for the Pacific coast department in 1867, and that his jurisdiction embraced Arizona, and that he had received instructions to

carefully examine into the mail conditions of the Territory and to re-establish the old Butterfield route between Los Angeles and Santa Fe, via Yuma and Tucson, and that he spent sixty odd days in Arizona from February 16, to April 16, visiting Maricopa Wells, Prescott, Tucson, Tubac, Wickenburg, Casa Grande and other places.

“He established new postoffices and new mail routes during his stay, many of which still exist. This was before there was any Phoenix or Florence; or, as he said, there were only stage stations between Yuma and Tucson, about 300 miles, although there was a big store at Maricopa Wells, owned by Hooper, Whiting & Co. After an hour’s running conversation and reminiscences, the major said, in substance, as remembered:

“‘It may be of interest to you to know that I named Phoenix—that is, officially. As a matter of fact, Governor R. C. McCormick asked me to have the spot called Phoenix, the name the settlement had previously been called, and I so recommended to the postoffice department, and this gave it its name officially. Shortly afterwards I named Florence, after a maiden sister of the governor, Florence McCormick. At the time I crossed the Salt River on my way from Tucson to Prescott, via Camp McDowell and the Vulture Mine, near Wickenburg, the Apaches were very dangerous, and the only white man our party met for 150 miles was a man named White, who owned a small flouring mill some distance from Maricopa Wells, within the

safety of the Pima Indians, who were about 12,000 strong and who fought and whipped the Apaches often, and whose boast it was that they had never killed a white man. The Maricopas numbered 1,500 and they and the Pimas were friendly and intermarried, but each spoke a different language.

“ ‘I stayed over at the Vulture mine twenty-four hours, in March, 1867, and was greatly interested, as it was the first gold mine and the first stamp mill I had ever seen. The owners were taking out lots of gold and gave me a fine little cube, and a free gold specimen of quartz, which in 1877 I presented to John Sherman, Secretary of the Treasury, under President Hayes.

“ ‘We were five days going from the Vulture mine to Prescott, the latter place having been so named by Governor McCormick after Prescott, the historian. Here I was entertained by the officers of the army, and at one of the dinners given me saw a roasted wild turkey that had weighed thirty-eight pounds after being dressed. There were deer and wild turkeys only a few miles from camp, but also Apaches.

“ ‘In 1878 I again visited Arizona as special agent of the post office department, and stopped over near Phoenix as the guest of a man named Hayden, who had a fine house and was building a big corral. Phoenix was then quite a town, and had a good hotel, several stores, and trees along one or more of its streets. The Southern Pacific only ran as far as Yuma, so I made the trip between Yuma and Tucson in a buckboard.

“ ‘Of course I could tell you a good many stories of this trip, how I was received at Tucson at receptions and balls given by Lord & Williams, the Zeckendorfs, and others, and of the good treatment I received at Phoenix, but I will call myself off now that I have presented the above salient features. But I have always had a mighty warm spot in my heart for Arizona, and have hoped for years that it would be made a state.’ ”

During these early years agriculture, of course, made more rapid strides in the Salt River Valley than in any other section of the Territory, because here the settlers were comparatively free from raids by the Apaches, being protected to a great extent by the Maricopa and Pima Indians, but there was a good deal of planting done during the years 1867, 1868 and 1869 in the north, in and around Prescott, and good crops raised in many places. Some attempts were made to cultivate lands in the southern portion of the Territory, but whatever was placed upon the land there in the way of livestock was oftentimes confiscated by the Indians.

In a report of a geological survey for a railroad made by General W. J. Palmer in 1867 and 1868 over the 32nd and 35th parallels, an account of which is given by William A. Bell in a work entitled “New Tracks in North America,” there is given an estimate of the arable land in the Territory, the number of acres under cultivation and the amount of grain, maize and wheat raised in 1867, which, to the present day reader, will prove interesting:

“Not reckoning its tributary valleys, the Gila valley has about 300,000 acres of arable land, capable of sustaining an agricultural and mining population of 200,000, which is, no doubt, a low estimate. During the same season the same land produces two crops, one of wheat and another of maize. The breadth of land now under cultivation—in many places subject to the frequent incursions of the terrible Apaches—is quite small. Intelligent residents gave me the following estimate for Southern Arizona:—

“ARABLE CULTIVABLE LAND.

	Acres
“Valley of the Aravaipa.....	5,000
“ “ “ San Pedro.....	50,000
“ “ “ Santa Cruz .....	20,000
“ “ “ Gila .....	300,000
“ “ “ Salt River .....	50,000
“ “ “ Colorado .....	15,000
“Total: .....	440,000

“UNDER CULTIVATION.

	Acres
“Tres Alamos and vicinity.....	500
Calabasas “ “ .....	200
Tubac “ “ .....	500
Tumacacori “ “ .....	50
San Xavier del Bac.....	100
Tucson .....	2,000
Above Pima Reservation, on Gila.....	1,000
Pima Reservation .....	1,000
Total:.....	5,350

## "MAIZE AND WHEAT RAISED IN 1867.

	lbs.
"Tres Alamos .....	500,000
Calabasas .....	200,000
Tubac .....	500,000
Tumacacori .....	50,000
San Xavier .....	50,000
Tucson .....	1,500,000
Gila river, above Reservation.....	1,000,000
Indian Reservation, wheat, 750,000	
maize, 250,000	1,000,000
Total: .....	4,800,000

"That part of Southern Arizona lying east of a line drawn from Baboquivari Peak to the Gila above Sacaton possesses, in common with New Mexico, great pastoral advantages. It is covered at all times of the year with a magnificent growth of grama grass—one of the most nutritious grasses known to stock raisers; and at no season of the year do cattle need other shelter than that afforded by natural variations in the surface of the ground.

"Timber is scarce. In the Santa Catarina and Santa Rita Mountains pine is abundant, but elsewhere, and then only upon the immediate banks of the streams, cottonwood and mesquit alone are found to supply either timber or fuel. The latter is a remarkably hard and durable leguminous wood, and grows in the lower Gila valley and in the Colorado to a size large enough for cross ties, and not unfrequently attains a diameter of from 18 to 30 inches. It makes the most highly prized pianoforte legs."



During the years 1867 and 1868 a large amount of corn and other grain was raised in the northern part of Arizona, and during those years large quantities were furnished to the United States Government at from eight to ten cents a pound.

## CHAPTER VI.

EARLY SETTLEMENTS—PHOENIX AND VICINITY  
(Continued).

MILL CITY OR EAST PHOENIX—HELLINGS' MILL  
—THE SWILLING FARM—SIXTH TERRI-  
TORIAL LEGISLATURE—CREATES COUNTY OF  
MARICOPA—OFFICIALS APPOINTED BY GOV-  
ERNOR SAFFORD—FIRST DISTRICT COURT OF  
MARICOPA COUNTY HELD BY JUDGE TWEED.

Mill City, or East Phoenix, became a village of considerable importance, and in 1872 demanded and received postal facilities. Ed. K. Buker, a well known resident of the valley, was appointed the first postmaster. By the middle of 1873, W. B. Hellings & Co., had built up a valuable trade the flour and produce, and during the following year added to their stock quantities of bacon and lard. At this time their steam mill was turning out an average of twelve thousand pounds of good flour every twelve hours from a superior quality of wheat grown in the valley.

In 1873 there was no demand for bran, so the manufacturers of the flour had to purchase hogs to consume all the refuse and unsalable stuff about the mill. The mill and the surrounding buildings were kept in first class repair, and the tract of land belonging to the firm was large, some of it planted to various crops. In 1873 the Swilling farm was added to these holdings. Upon this farm were planted apple and peach trees, and grape vines.

In a letter dated in November of the year 1872, the late Edward Irvine, of Phoenix, wrote the following description of the Swilling farm:

"On Saturday, November 9th, Granville H. Oury, J. B. Hartt and myself started out afoot, on a little excursion. Avoiding the roads we followed up the Dutch Ditch, a branch of the Swilling Canal; crossed the Extension, another branch of the same, and came upon a neat little artificial pond in a clump of willows and cottonwoods, which was covered with tame ducks, the property of J. W. Swilling, whose house, a comfortably large one, 59 x 80 feet stood nearby. Mr. Swilling's ranch is conveniently situated near the head of the main ditch, on which he has a vineyard and an orchard containing apple, peach, plum, pear, cherry, fig, walnut and orange trees, all of which looked thrifty and promising, except the latter, which were injured by the frost. A patch of fine large cane close by, gave indications of the future production of sugar."

Long rows of cottonwoods, some poplars, and other shade trees were growing rapidly upon Hellings & Co.'s property, while castor bean plants were also abundant. In 1870, the property was covered with nothing but sage brush and greasewood, with not a drop of water in sight, so that the great change brought about in a few years by the owners was gratifying to all those who were interested in the progress of the valley.

The following article which appeared in the "Tucson Citizen" of January 2nd, 1875, shows the enterprise of Hellings Bros.:

“Among the noteworthy establishments of Arizona is that of Wm. B. Hellings & Co., of East Phoenix, in the Salt River Valley. It is well known throughout Arizona that they have a very large and complete steam flouring mill in the heart of the largest area of agricultural land, well supplied with water, in Arizona, and that they have been quite successful in operating it, as well as in making pork, bacon and lard. But during this year they intend enlarging and perfecting their pork and bacon establishment by the introduction of all the best appliances obtainable in the old states. Additional buildings will be erected and machinery installed for handling the hogs and for the making of all the barrels and casks required, right on the ground, and the whole business is to be systematized and perfected in its details as it is in the cities of Chicago, St. Louis and Cincinnati. They killed 250 hogs in 1874, and they proved to be of better quality and weight than in 1873, and better than was expected prior to killing and dressing. The result of their operations in 1874 was, or will be when completed, 400 barrels of mess pork with proportionate quantities of bacon, lard and sausages. They will ship these articles to various markets in the Territory, not supplied by local producers. It is the purpose of the firm to make their articles equally as good as can be purchased in the San Francisco or other markets, and sell them as cheaply as they can be laid down here from any other market. Local dealers will find it to their advantage to patronize them.”

The following item also appeared in the same newspaper shortly after:

"W. B. Hellings & Co., have 60,000 pounds of hams and bacon on the way from Phoenix to Tucson, and have made arrangements to supply all the stores of this town. Samples of their manufacture may be seen at E. N. Fish & Co.'s store, and we are entirely safe in saying that no better articles of hams and bacon were ever offered in any market. They have put the bacon up in shape particularly convenient for miners or other persons who have to camp out, and yet in entirely acceptable form for household uses. Mr. W. B. Hellings has satisfied himself that the Salt River Valley climate cannot be excelled for the curing of hams and bacon; in fact, he is of the opinion that it is superior to any other part, and he stands ready to guarantee that everything made by his firm will keep perfectly for one year, and we thoroughly believe that he is entirely safe in making such an offer. We think this locality favored in getting the products named, for they are without question, first class in every way."

In March, 1875, the Hellings Company opened a branch store at Tucson for the special sale of the flour, pork, bacon, and lard produced at East Phoenix. A grocery trust, such as are quite common throughout the country to-day, existed at the time in the Old Pueblo, called the "Mercantile Association," with which the Hellings Company had no connection. Their advertisement stated that "From all persons who desire a fair competition in trade, and who are opposed to combinations and monopolies, such as now

exist here, we ask patronage. Within sixty days we will receive a large stock of staple groceries, which will be sold much below the present rates."

Their establishment in Tucson was called the "Marble Front," and was located on Main Street.

In Hinton's "Handbook to Arizona," published in 1878, appears the following description of East Phoenix:

"East Phoenix is a very pretty little hamlet gathered about a large flouring mill, with water running on either side of its only street, which for half a mile is also lined with young cotton-wood trees."

To-day, however, nothing remains but a few crumbling ruins where this thriving and ambitious village once stood. The bare blackened walls of the three storied mill are still standing to designate the center of Mill City's business activity. In later years the land upon which the little village had flourished became the property of John J. Gardiner, and was known as the Gardiner Ranch. He cleared away most of the old ruins, and used the old mill for the storing of hay and grain until fire destroyed it.

The population of the Salt River Valley had increased to such an extent, that when the election was held in 1870 for Territorial and County officers, it was the second largest precinct in Yavapai County. In Phoenix precinct at this election the vote cast numbered 188, while the vote cast in Prescott was 306. J. A. Young and C. Carter, were elected Justices of the Peace, and James A. Moon, constable.

The Sixth Territorial Legislature was convened at Tucson in 1871. Its members were as follows:

## COUNCIL.

Name.	Residence.	Occupation.	Age.	Where Born.
Yavapai County.				
John T. Alsap,	Phoenix,	Farmer,	40	Kentucky.
Harley H. Cartter,	Prescott,	Lawyer,	61	New York.
Andrew J. Marmaduke,	Prescott,	Farmer,	45	Virginia.
Mohave and Pah-Ute Cos.				
Not Represented.				
Yuma County.				
John H. Phillips,	Eureka,	Physician,	56	New Jersey.
Pima County.				
Hiram S. Stevens,	Tucson,	Merchant,	39	Vermont.
Daniel H. Stickney,	Santa Rita,	Clerk,	58	Massachusetts.
Estevan Ochoa,	Tucson,	Merchant,	37	Chihuahua.
Francisco S. Leon,	Tucson,	Ranchero,	52	Arizona.

## HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES.

Name.	Residence.	Occupation.	Age.	Where Born.
Yavapai County.				
J. H. Fitzgerald,	Wickenburg,	Metallurgist,	39	Kentucky.
John L. Taylor,	Prescott,	Farmer,	36	Kentucky.
William J. O'Neill,	Kirkland Val.,	Farmer,	40	Ireland.
G. A. Wilson,	Phoenix,	Farmer,	52	Virginia.
Joseph Melvin,	Verde,	Farmer,	40	Pennsylvania.
James L. Mercer,	Phoenix,	Farmer,	36	Ohio.
Mohave and Pah-Ute Cos.				
Not Represented.				
Yuma County.				
Marcus D. Dobbins,	Arizona City,	Lawyer,	43	Pennsylvania.
C. H. Brinley,	Arizona City,	Miner,	43	Massachusetts.
Thomas J. Bidwell,	Ehrenberg,	Gardener,	38	Missouri.
Pima County.				
J. W. Anderson,	Florence,	Farmer,	45	North Carolina.
F. H. Goodwin,	Tucson,	Physician,	37	Georgia.
William Morgan,	Tucson,	Farmer,	27	Pennsylvania.
W. L. Fowler,	Tucson,	Farmer,	25	Pennsylvania.
Ramon Romano,	Tubac,	Farmer,	34	Mexico.
Juan Elias,	Tucson,	Farmer,	30	Mexico.
Rees Smith,	Tubac,	Farmer,	42	Ohio.

The Legislature was organized by the election of Daniel H. Stickney, of Pima County, as President of the Council. He died before the end of

the session and Harley H. Cartter, of Yavapai, was elected to fill the vacancy.

Marcus D. Dobbins, of Yuma, was elected Speaker of the House of Representatives.

The following is the record concerning the creation of the County of Maricopa at this session:

**"IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTA-  
TIVES:**

"Jan. 26—Mr. Fitzgerald introduced a bill 'Creating the County of Pinal,' and a motion to suspend the rules, for second reading, was lost by the following vote:

"AYES—Messrs. Anderson, Bidwell, Melvin, Mercer, O'Neill, Smith and Taylor—7.

"NAYS—Messrs. Brinley, Elias, Fitzgerald, Fowler, Goodwin, Romano, Wilson and Mr. Speaker—8.

"Jan. 27—The bill 'Creating the County of Pinal, read a second time and a motion to make it the special order for Feb. 23rd was lost by a vote of 7 to 8, being then referred to the "Committee on Counties and County Boundaries."

"Jan. 28.—A petition from Pima and Yavapai citizens for a new county was refused reference to the 'Committee on Counties and County Boundaries' by a vote of 5 to 9, and was then referred to a 'Committee of Five'—three from Yavapai, and two from Pima—consisting of Messrs. Fitzgerald, Mercer, Taylor, Anderson and Smith.

"Feb. 1.—Messrs. Fitzgerald, Mercer, Smith and Taylor, of the 'Special Committee' to whom was referred the petition of citizens from Pima



and Yavapai, for a new county, embracing the Gila and Salt River Settlements, reported it back and recommended that it be laid on the table. Subsequently the petition came up for action, and by a vote of 9 to 6, it was laid upon the table.

"Feb. 6.—Mr. Fowler, of the 'Committee on Counties, etc.' reported favorably upon the bill to create the 'County of Pinal,' which was considered in Committee of the Whole, without recommendation.

"Feb. 7.—The Pinal County bill was considered in Committee of the Whole, and was amended; the committee arose and asked to sit again. The Pinal County bill came up again and was amended in Committee of the Whole, so as to exclude Wickenburg; this proceeding was adopted by the following vote:

"AYES—Messrs. Anderson, Bidwell, Brinley, Elias, Melvin, Mercer, Morgan, O'Neill, Romano, Smith, Taylor and Wilson, 12.

"NAYS—Messrs. Fitzgerald, Fowler, Goodwin, and Mr. Speaker, 4."

After this action the bill and report was referred to the Yavapai Delegation as was also a petition presented by Mr. Mercer, from citizens of Salt River Valley on the same subject.

"Feb. 9.—The Yavapai Delegation, to whom had been referred the Pinal County bill, reported a 'substitute bill' for that 'Creating the County of Pinal'; which was adopted."

Mr. Anderson, of Pima, moved to amend the substitute bill so as to embrace territory

south of the Gila; upon this motion the vote stood as follows:

“AYES—Messrs. Anderson and Morgan—2.

“NAYS—Messrs. Bidwell, Elias, Fowler, Goodwin, Mercer, O'Neill, Romano, Smith, Taylor, Wilson and Mr. Speaker—11.”

The substitute bill “Creating the County of Maricopa” was then considered engrossed and passed by the following vote:

“AYES—Messrs. Bidwell, Elias, Fowler, Goodwin, Mercer, Morgan, O'Neill, Romano, Smith, Taylor and Wilson—11.

“NAYS—Mr. Anderson and Mr. Speaker—2.

#### “IN THE COUNCIL.

“Feb. 11.—After the opening of the day's proceedings, Mr. Phillips, of Yuma, presented a petition from citizens of Wickenburg, Vulture City, the Vulture Mine and Phoenix, asking for a new county, to be formed out of Yavapai; this petition was ordered laid on the table.”

The “substitute bill” for that creating the County of Pinal, which was the one to “Create the County of Maricopa,” was then brought up and was passed unanimously.

#### “IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES:

“Feb. 15.—After the opening of the day's proceedings, a communication was received from the office of the Governor announcing his approval of a number of bills, among them being:

“‘An Act to create the County of Maricopa,’ ” this bill having been signed by Governor Safford on the previous day.

Thus, on February 14th, 1871, on the 35th day of the session of the Sixth Legislative Assembly, the county of Maricopa was officially created.

This was the second county created by an Arizona Legislature, under pressure of public petitions.

The First Legislative Assembly divided the Territory into the four immense counties of Mohave, Pima, Yavapai and Yuma.

Out of the northern portion of Mohave County was carved in 1865 the county of Pah Ute, the first created by petition of citizens after the initial session of the Legislature, and which occupied the extreme northwestern corner of Arizona.

For some reason, to this day unexplained, the greater portion of the land included in this Arizona county was ceded to the State of Nevada by the Congress of the United States under an act passed on May 5, 1866.

This act provided, however, that the cession should not be valid unless consent for the acceptance of the same, was formally given by the Nevada Legislature. This latter body, soon after, accepted in due form this valuable grant, which comprised an area of 12,225 square miles, by passing the required legislation on January 18th, 1867.

By this peculiar act Arizona's area was reduced from 126,141 to 113,916 square miles, its present area, and "Pah-Ute" County, Arizona, was almost wiped out of existence.

In 1871, by the same legislature which created the county of Maricopa, the act creating this first county was repealed, furnishing, at the same time, the only instance in our political history,

wherein a once official county name cannot be found upon the maps or records of today. That remnant of Pah-Ute county which was left in Arizona was again merged with the mother county, and is still a portion thereof, valuable mostly for its vast stretches of virgin timber.

In Yavapai county, the passage of the "Maricopa County" bill created much discussion, and some doubt was expressed as to the ability of the residents of the Salt River Valley to sustain a separate county government, without the aid of the settlements along the south side of the Gila River. The following correspondence expresses fully the sentiment of that day:

"The trustees of the young and growing town of Phoenix, have shown very good sense in having set apart lots for school, church, and Masonic purposes, and we are sorry that the entire people of the settlement did not exhibit equally good sense upon the county question.

"They should not have severed their connection with us at this time, when both we and they are 'hard up.' Had they succeeded in having the 'Gila Settlements' included in their new county, we would not have said one word against the movement. But as 'Maricopa County' now stands, we cannot help thinking that its people will have to 'pay too dear for their whistle.'

"But then the railroad is coming, and all will soon be well with our neighbors of Phoenix, Maricopa County, Arizona." ("Miner," March 4th, 1871.)

And also the following:

"By 'The Citizen' of February 18th, we learn of the creation of the new county of 'Maricopa,'

and also, to our astonishment, learn that it is made entirely out of Yavapai County. There is but little feeling here about the division of this county, as it is large enough to be divided again and leave plenty of land for us, but that the southern boundary of the new county should be made the Gila river, is surprising to us who have not yet learned the reason. If the southern boundary had been so located as to take in all the settlements in the Gila Valley, south of that river, it would have been a sensible arrangement and have been geographically correct; as it is, the inhabitants along the Gila in Pima County are not benefited, their natural affinities with their neighbors on this side of the river are not strengthened, and the new county has not the population without them to go on as prosperously as would be desirable. Probably two years will show all parties interested that 'Maricopa County,' must have the southern portion of the Gila Valley to be complete and comfortable."

Over twenty times two years have now passed, and these misgivings sound strange and out of place to us of today, when Maricopa County is one of the wealthiest and most prosperous subdivisions in the State.

The Bill as passed, was as follows:

"Section 1. All that portion of the Territory of Arizona, now embraced within the present boundaries of Yavapai County, and bounded as follows, to-wit:

"Commencing at the point where the San Carlos River crosses the parallel of thirty-four degrees of north latitude, and running thence to a point on the Rio Verde, thirty miles above its

mouth, where it empties into Salt River, thence to the White Tanks, and thence due west to the eastern boundary of Yuma County; thence south along said line to the Gila river; thence up said river, following the principal channel thereof, to the mouth of the San Carlos river to the point of beginning; be and the same is hereby created into a county to be known and designated as the County of Maricopa.

"Section 2. The Governor of this Territory is hereby authorized and empowered to appoint all such county officers in the county of Maricopa, as may be necessary to effect a complete county organization under the laws of this Territory, and the Probate Judge so appointed may qualify before any officer in the county of Yavapai, or Pima, authorized to administer oaths; and all other county officers, appointed as aforesaid, shall qualify before the Probate Judge of Maricopa County; and the bonds of all county officers appointed in said county, where by law bonds are required, shall be subject to his approval.

"Section 3. All officers except the Probate Judge appointed in the said county of Maricopa, as hereinbefore provided, shall hold their respective offices until their successors shall be duly elected and qualified, and the Probate Judge, appointed as aforesaid, shall hold his office until his successor shall be duly appointed and qualified under the general laws of this Territory.

"Section 4. There shall be a special election held in the County of Maricopa, on the first Monday of May, A. D. 1871, at which special election

Alsap, on February 13th; it passed that body unanimously on February 15th; it passed the House by 15 ayes, nays none, on February 17th, and on February 18th the Council received a message from the Governor announcing his approval of the same.

Judge Charles A. Tweed presided over the District, and he opened the First District Court for the County at Phoenix, with C. C. McDermott as Clerk of the court. Judge Tweed received his appointment to the Arizona Bench while a resident of California, his name being sent to the Senate on April 14th, and being confirmed by that body on April 18th, 1870. At the same time John Titus was appointed Chief Justice in place of Wm. F. Turner, who had served in that capacity ever since the organization of the Territory.

Before coming to Arizona, Judge Tweed had been a resident of Auburn, Placer County, California, for a period of fifteen years, where, for a time, he served as District Attorney, and for one term represented that county in the State Senate. He was noted for his amiability; a profound thinker and a rare conversationalist, he was a favorite in every circle.

On the night of July 22nd, 1871, J. H. Fitzgerald, of Yavapai County, one of the most active members of the House in this Legislature during the county division controversy, committed suicide at Mill City by taking a dose of strychnine. He had been living at Wickenburg when elected, and left a wife and family in Los Angeles, California, at the time of his death.

## CHAPTER VII.

### PROGRESS OF SALT RIVER VALLEY.

AGRICULTURAL AREA INCREASING — FIRST HARVESTING MACHINERY BROUGHT IN BY "CRETE" BRYAN AND W. J. MULHOLLAND — MANY VARIETIES OF GRAIN, FRUIT AND VEGETABLES GROWN — ACREAGE CULTIVATED — PIMA AND MARICOPA INDIANS AFFORD PROTECTION TO FARMERS AGAINST APACHES — VALUE OF PRODUCTS — TAXABLE PROPERTY — COST OF CLEARING LAND — COST OF CULTIVATION — IRRIGATING CANALS IN 1872 — ACREAGE UNDER IRRIGATION — SUMMARY OF IRRIGATING CONDITIONS IN SALT RIVER VALLEY.

The year 1870 was a very important one to the Phoenix Settlement. It marked the beginning of an era of prosperity to the farmers in that section. The agricultural area under cultivation throughout Yavapai County, was increasing all the time. The farming acreage of the Salt River Valley was expanding more rapidly than in any other locality. In this year the first harvesting machinery was brought into the valley, Crete Bryan, of Wickenburg, bringing in a header, and a well known rancher from Florence, W. J. Mulholland, driving over a threshing machine, and these two worked over a portion of the valley during that season. In the spring of the following year, the firm of Murphy & Dennis, and William and John Osborn, brought in threshers, while in 1873 Lum Gray and John P. Osborn, aided by Barnett & Block,



brought two more machines into the valley. After this they became quite common throughout the valley.

Various kinds of fruit trees and vines were planted during the season of 1870. These vines and trees were brought overland from Southern California, and it required a good deal of care to have the young plants reach their destination in good condition, but, once set in the ground, the extreme fertility of the soil insured their rapid growth. Early settlers, during the first years of farming, having but little or no capital, had to rely upon their own energy for their support, so little opportunity was given for experimentation in products. The preparation of the ground, and the sowing of seed and setting of cuttings or young trees, required the expenditures of but little money. By the middle of 1870 there was perhaps a hundred fruit trees of various kinds, including fig, quince, plum, peach, English walnut, apricot and orange, set out in the valley with no absolute knowledge at that time that they would become productive. In 1868 grape cuttings were first set out by Jack Swilling and the Starar Brothers, and did well from the start, and consequently, were extensively planted by the early residents. Of the cereals, barley was the favorite crop, and yielded heavily each season, while corn was planted extensively during the first years. The latter crop, however, was gradually supplanted by wheat, which always made a good crop. In 1870 only sixteen acres were planted to alfalfa in the Valley, being on the farms of Barnum, Duppa, Gray, and Swilling, and but two and a half acres

of oats had been sowed, a couple of acres on the ranch of Darrell Duppa, and a half acre on that of the Starar Brothers. Gordon A. Wilson was the first to experiment with pecans, peanuts and tobacco, having, in 1870, about fifteen trees of the former, about a quarter of an acre of peanuts, and about a hundred plants of tobacco. J. G. Young was the first to try the cultivation of orange trees in the Valley, and, in 1870, had three trees of that variety upon his farm. In the latter part of 1872 Jack Swilling had quite a number of these trees on his ranch, which did not do very well on account of the exposed character of the land. Afterwards on better and more protected ground, they proved a success. The acreage in the staple crops increased steadily year by year, and from some two hundred and fifty acres cultivated in 1868, the cultivated area expanded to something less than a thousand acres in 1869, and to approximately 1700 acres in 1870.

During the latter year only twenty farmers had planted crops of various kinds, mostly barley and corn, although the water supply at that time was sufficient to irrigate a far greater amount of land than was then under tillage. These pioneer tillers of the soil were, according to Barney, the following:

John T. Alsap and Wm. L. Osborn, with about 57 acres.

John Ammerman, with about 225 acres.

Thomas Barnum, with about 103 acres.

Jacob Denslinger, with about 82 acres.

Darrell Duppa, with about 175 acres.

Columbus H. Gray, with about 72 acres.

George James, with about 64 acres.

John Larsen, with about 86 acres.

John B. Montgomery, with about 60 acres.

Frank Metzler, with about 78 acres.

James Murphy and John T. Dennis, with about 98 acres.

Benjamin F. Patterson, with about 61 acres.

Lewis Rodgers, with about 100 acres.

John W. Swilling, with about 193 acres.

Jacob and Andrew Starar, with about 243 acres.

Gordon A. Wilson, with about 78 acres.

J. G. Young, with about 52 acres.

In the San Francisco Weekly Bulletin, of California, there appeared in 1870, a well written article by a prominent pioneer, entitled "Wanderings over Arizona," from which the following, relating to the early Salt River settlement, is taken:

"On Salt River is a settlement of about three hundred people engaged exclusively in agriculture. The whole neighborhood is entitled 'Phoenix' and extends some miles along the river bottom, on the north side of the stream, and lies several miles above its junction with the Gila. The land is very rich, and was evidently cultivated years ago, for the channels of ditches are not wholly filled up, and may be traced for many miles though overgrown with shrubbery. Careful estimates give the amount of good land in this vicinity at 50,000 acres, only 1200 of which are under cultivation, and a comparatively small amount is claimed. Salt River is larger than the Gila above the junction, and is supplied from the White Mountains where the

snow falls deep, and springs are abundant, and Mr. Swilling, an intelligent farmer, is of the opinion that by carefully managing the water from this stream, the entire arable land of the valley could be brought under cultivation. This body of land lies several miles from any mountains, and therefore is comparatively safe from Indian depredations. But few raids have been made, and the raiders rarely got away with their booty, being overtaken as a rule, on the plains intervening between the Valley and the mountains. The first settlements were made in December, 1867. Only two of all went there with money, and they with but little. Many are now in easy circumstances, and all are 'gathering gear' happy and contented. A few rent their lands for a fine income and do nothing but oversee their business. The crops are a full average this year and small grain sells on the farm at from four to five cents per pound. Sweet potatoes are produced to perfection, and one farmer has sixteen acres growing. Fruit trees are to be obtained soon and the mildness of the climate is a guaranty that all the delicate fruits will grow excellently. For the farmer and fruit grower there is no more inviting locality in Central Arizona, and I doubt if in any other portion of the Territory."

Soon after there appeared in the Prescott "Miner," the following letter:

"Phoenix, A. T., Aug. 13, 1870.

"Upwards of 30 Pimas and Maricopas, with one citizen of this neighborhood, named Eugene Carter, passed here yesterday on their return

from a raid for a week against the Pinal Apaches. They report one fight in which they killed two Pinals and destroyed a large rancheria. One of the party had a large bundle of tanned buckskins, and much other property of more or less value was in their possession. It is well known that these raids are quite common, and to them and Camp McDowell this flourishing settlement feels indebted for the security of life and property enjoyed. They have made this section unsafe for Apaches, and the latter have rarely attempted depredations therein. There are many similar illustrations of the great practical value of the hostility of one tribe towards another. \* \* \* This settlement is receiving constant accessions of working people. Within a few weeks some thirty new ranches have been located and four families have taken up their abode on as many farms. The older settlers have become attached to their new homes. A few grape vines were planted here two years ago, and as those who did it had no confidence in their production, they were uncared for; but this season Messrs. Swilling and Starar each had a fine crop of as delicious grapes as ever grew in California, and they, as well as others, have determined to henceforth plant and properly cultivate vineyards. The common belief has been that Irish potatoes would not flourish here, but experiments this year prove otherwise. \* \* \* Fig, pomegranate and other varieties, to a limited extent, of fruit trees have been planted and already steps have been taken to procure, during the coming fall, sev-

eral wagon loads of vines and trees from California.

"Willows and cottonwoods have been planted for fences and shade, and they have grown rapidly. Some already make a secure fence, while all give some shelter from the sun and beauty to the landscape. Barley has been an average crop and the ruling price on the farm is 4 cents gold, and will be no lower this year. Corn is still being planted; experience has proven that the late planting yields a better grain and larger crops. Sweet potatoes may be planted with nearly equal advantage from early in June to nearly September, and they are still being planted at this date."

Still greater progress was made in the development of the Salt River Valley during the year 1871. Many new ditches were taken out on both sides of the river, and a great deal of new ground was leveled and prepared for cultivation. During this year three thousand fruit trees of various kinds were brought from California and set out in the valley, and the area of cultivated land increased to some 4500 acres. The assessment-roll for this year showed taxable property to the value of \$170,000, and all doubts as to the permanency of the settlement, and the value of the lands placed under cultivation, were dissipated. The area of cultivated land in and about Phoenix had increased in 1872 approximately to 8100 acres, seven thousand acres on the north side, and eleven hundred acres on the south side of the river. The land on the south side lay nearly opposite Phoenix, and was irrigated by the Prescott

Ditch, which covered some six hundred acres of land, and by two other smaller ditches which, together, carried water for about five hundred acres. Of the 8100 acres around Phoenix cultivated during this year, 4000 were sowed to barley, 2500 acres to wheat, and the balance was given over to the gardens, truck patches, alfalfa, orchards and vineyards. The estimated value of the products raised in the valley during the year 1872 was \$500,000, while the taxable property was valued at \$290,000.

A well known farmer of the valley thus wrote of the prospects for the season of 1872:

“All of the barley and wheat crops look well and will average, I think, to the acre, about 25 bushels. Many farmers here will exclaim against this average, and pronounce it entirely too low, but I think, nevertheless, that it is about the true one. There are many acres of grain in this valley that will yield 2500 lbs. per acre, but taking all that is sown, early and late, plowed in, harrowed in, and brushed in, 1500 lbs. is about the true average. This will give as the yield of the valley about 5,000,000 pounds of barley, and a little over 4,000,000 lbs. of wheat. Of this total about 2,000,000 pounds of barley will be required at home during this coming season for feed and seed, and about 500,000 pounds of wheat will be needed for seed. The balance will be for market, and will all be disposed of before January 1st, 1873. Buyers are, at present, bidding three cents per pound, and much grain will be sold at that price by those who are compelled to sell, while those who are able to hold on to their grain will get 4 or 4½

cents per pound before the next harvest. These prices do not include sacks, as all sales are made here in bulk, and the buyer furnishes sacks if he wants it put up that way."

The cost of clearing up a farm and putting it in condition for cultivation varied a great deal throughout the Salt River Valley. To clear "mesquite lands" cost from three to seven dollars an acre in 1872, while "sage brush lands" could be cleared and made ready for the plow at an expense of from one to two dollars per acre. The mesquite land produced the best looking grain, that is to say, it grew taller and looked greener, but whether the yield was greater or not, was never thoroughly demonstrated. It was the consensus of opinion that the "mesquite lands" would yield a larger crop than the "sage brush lands" but whether the excess production was sufficient to pay for the extra cost of clearing, was a disputed question. Either class of lands yielded crops of sufficient value if properly cultivated, to pay the farmer good wages and interest on the money expended. During the year 1872, harvesting machinery became more plentiful in the Salt River Valley, and prices for harvesting crops were, therefore, reduced. During the season of 1871 it had cost \$4.00 per acre to have grain harvested with a header, and during this year it was reduced to \$3.00 per acre. Usually the threshing was done upon a royalty basis; one-twelfth of the grain threshed going to the thresher, the farmer, in addition, furnishing the hands necessary to bring the grain to the ma-



chine. It cost about ten dollars per acre to cut and thresh grain and prepare it for the market during the early 70's.

Early in 1872 there were six ditches or irrigating canals taken from the north side of the Salt River Valley near Phoenix, as follows:

The Swilling Irrigating Canal.

Wilson's Ditch.

The Juan Chiavria, often called the Griffin Ditch.

The Salt River Ditch, later known as the Farmers' Canal.

The Monterey Ditch.

The Mexican Ditch.

Of these the Swilling Irrigating Canal was the first constructed, work on it having been, as already stated, commenced in 1867. In April, 1868, it had, according to Barney, a total length of about two and three-quarter miles and a width of some twenty feet. Its cost was equivalent to about ten thousand dollars. It was enlarged and improved every year after 1868. In 1871, a portion of new ditch, with its head nearly three-quarters of a mile up the river, was dug, intersecting the old channel at a point 3300 feet from the river in a straight line.

This last stretch of canal was twenty feet on the bottom, with an average depth of about ten feet, and cost \$9,000. Both the old and new ditches were used, and were capable of supplying, in 1872, about eight thousand inches of water, and much more by raising the dams across the river at their heads. The Swilling Company originally claimed five thousand inches, which was later increased by an additional claim

of seven thousand inches, making a total appropriation of twelve thousand inches. The first head of this ditch was intended for, and was a temporary affair, to enable the farmers to bring water upon the land while the more difficult work of opening a permanent water head was being actively prosecuted. The water in the old Swilling Ditch was brought to the surface of the ground about a mile from the head of the ditch, and near this point it was divided into three principal divisions, as follows:

The Dutch Ditch, which ran westward and down the river.

The Extension, which ran northwest for about a mile and then turned westward, and was, in reality, the main canal.

The North Extension, which ran northwest about three and a half miles and then turned westward, being divided there again into smaller ditches.

The first two supplied the farms nearest to the river for something like two miles from its banks, while the last was intended to furnish water to farms out on the plain in the direction of Wickenburg. It was hoped in 1872 that crops would be raised as far away as five miles from the river, on the plains to the northwest. Farms had already been located in that section, and the owners were engaged in clearing and putting their ground in condition for the planting of corn and sorghum during the season of 1872.

The Dutch Ditch was the principal lateral to the south from the main Swilling Canal, and was so named on account of the large number of per-

sons of German descent who helped in its construction. It left the main channel about a mile above the old Hellings Flour Mill, and carried water upon those ranches situated along the river. Its construction was commenced in the year 1868, and, when completed, it passed along the southern boundary of the original townsite, ending upon the ranch of John Montgomery; what is now known as the Montgomery Addition to the City of Phoenix.

The Extension Canal was the main stream of the Swilling Canal, which ran almost parallel to the Dutch Ditch and about a mile to the north of the latter. It is now known as the Salt River Valley Canal, and flows in a westerly direction passing in its course through the City of Phoenix where it is called the Town Ditch. This ditch flowed near the northern boundary of the original townsite, but as the growth of residential Phoenix has been northward, it was not many years before the canal was flowing through the most populated districts, often underneath dwelling houses, and across private yards. In the early seventies it furnished the residents of Phoenix with water for domestic purposes, "sending a rippling stream through every street, so that, instead of the usual gutter seen in eastern cities, there was a running rivulet between the sidewalks and the roadways."

Years after the stockholders of the old Swilling Company decided to divide their interests, and this branch became known as the Salt River Valley Canal. On the 16th day of September, 1875, articles of incorporation for the Salt River Valley Canal Company were filed in

the office of the Territorial Secretary. The incorporation papers stated that this company proposed to take water from the river near the head of the old ditch of the Swilling Company; that it had a capital stock of \$20,000, divided into forty shares, valued at \$500 each, and that the headquarters of the company would be located at Phoenix.

The North Extension Ditch was the north lateral of the Swilling Canal, and carried its waters on a parallel and about a mile to the north of the Extension, or main canal. This branch canal was constructed in 1872 by stockholders of the Swilling Canal Company, who had become dissatisfied with the management of the company's affairs. On the 19th of February, 1872, the following was written from Phoenix.

"Some of our honest farmers, among them Dr. Alsap, William Osborn, Tom Barnum, Captain Hancock and others, are taking out what is called 'The North Extension of the Swilling Canal.' It runs to the east of Swilling's Castle, and to the north of Barnum and Alsap, and covers a large scope of country heretofore without water. The extension is twenty feet wide, so, you will see, it will carry some water."

Shortly afterwards the relations between the shareholders of the old company became strained, and their difficulties were adjusted through the formation of two separate companies, the North Extension calling itself "The Maricopa Canal Company," and carrying its waters on a parallel one mile north of the Swilling Company, and, on the 14th of September,

1875, the Maricopa Canal Company was incorporated. By their papers on file in the office of the Secretary of Territory, the company proposed to take water from the river near the head of the new ditch of the Swilling Company. Its capital stock was given as \$25,000, divided into fifty shares valued at \$500 each, and its principal place of business was designated as Phoenix.

The officers of the Swilling Company were, at first, elected for six months, and its first secretary was Darrell Duppa, whose career has been fully treated in a previous chapter. Duppa was followed by James B. McKinnie, who came into the valley in the early part of 1869, and following Major McKinnie as Secretary of the Company came John T. Alsap, one of the most popular residents of the valley, universally conceded to be a man of honesty and fairness, ever ready to lend his support to any worthy cause. On September 2nd, 1872, the Swilling Company elected the late Francis A. Shaw as "Ditch Overseer for the ensuing year," in place of Dan Twomey, later killed by Indians near Camp McDowell. The "Ditch Overseer" of the early period has now been supplanted by the Water Commissioners of the valley and a band of individuals known as "zanjeros" who attend to the distribution of irrigation water throughout the valley.

In time a large lateral was constructed as a north branch of the old North Extension, or Maricopa Canal, that took in higher land still further to the north. This lateral was known as the "Big Maricopa Canal" while from the

point of division, the first lateral was known as the "Little Maricopa Canal."

Next came the Wilson Ditch, which was the second large acequia to be built and constructed by the early settlers of the valley on the north side of the Salt River. It headed a little below the original Swilling head, and irrigated lands to the south of the Phoenix Settlement near the river. It was owned and used entirely by four farmers in 1872, for the delivery of water upon their several farms. These farmers were Gordon A. Wilson, Benjamin F. Patterson, Charles Davies and John Aversch, the latter known to his neighbors as 'Go John' and noted for his generosity. The ditch was named for Gordon A. Wilson, who had taken up a ranch in the valley about the middle of 1868, and who was among its most prosperous and enterprising citizens. In 1872 this ditch carried about four thousand inches of water, and it cost up to that time about \$2500.

The next ditch down the river was the Juan Chiavria, which covered some of the best mesquite lands in the valley, and carried about 2,000 inches of water. This ditch was named after Juan Chiavria, a noted chief of the Pima and Maricopa tribes, and a man of great influence among his people. The ditch, however, was most commonly known among the settlers as the Griffin Ditch, and headed at a point on the river about where the Centre Street bridge now spans this stream. It is said that this ditch was started in 1869 by a rancher known as Frenchy Sawyer, to whom reference has been heretofore made, who had a section of land

to the west of the Underwood ranch, about two miles further down the river. He failed to obtain water for his first crop, and had to depend upon the Swilling Ditch, which was about one mile to the north of him. In 1870 Martin P. Griffin bought in with Sawyer, and the following year the ditch was completed and incorporated by Griffin and A. Barnett. About the middle of 1872 it was enlarged from a ditch with a four foot bottom, with twenty shares, to one with a twenty-five foot bottom, with sixty shares. When this work was completed in the early part of December of that year, the canal proper was extended into the valley for some miles further. A year or two afterwards Michael Wormser came into the valley and purchased the local interests of Barnett, and thus became interested in the Griffin ditch. The company was reorganized and was composed of the following stockholders: William D. Fenter, Michael Wormser and Martin P. Griffin. This ditch was about three and a half miles in length, and after the early eighties was much of the time idle on account of shortage of water in the river.

Further down the river came the Salt River Ditch, partly owned by persons living in Wickensburg, among them were A. H. Peeples, J. M. Bryan, more commonly known as "Crete" and George Bryan. It was, at the time of its construction, the largest ditch in the valley, being twenty-five feet wide on the bottom, and could supply, in the early part of 1872, about twelve inches of water. At that time this ditch was about three miles long and had cost about

\$22,000. It was the intention of the company to extend the ditch some eight or ten miles further during the season of 1872, or, more definitely speaking, to the Agua Fria river, in order to cover the large body of fine land in that locality.

In the "Miner" of June 29th, 1872, the following about the Salt River Ditch appeared:

"Phoenix, June 21, 1872.

"Captain Hancock, J. A. Chenowith, Mr. Cavaness, I. L. Dickinson and E. Irvine, made an excursion to the lower part of the valley, along the surveyed route of the Salt River Irrigating Canal. This country is very level, not having an eminence a foot high for miles around, except old adobe ruins or ditch borders, remains of the works of a people who cultivated this valley in ages gone by, and who have passed away, their history shrouded in oblivion, their noble braves, fair women, and noble deeds forgotten. The farthest point reached by the party was about ten miles from the present terminus of the ditch, and must have been at least twenty miles from the nearest foothills. Salt River Valley lay to the east; the Gila Valley, above the junction of Salt River, lay to the southeast; the Agua Fria Valley lay to the northeast, and the apparent uniting of these three valleys into one, lay to the west, following the course of the Gila to the Gulf. The soil is rich, yet, for the lack of water, the country, at present, looks very much like a desert, but no worse than the land around the lower part of Mesquite did last December,



that is now loaded down with grain, some of which will pay, at least, \$40 per acre this year above all expenses. This immense tract of land will support a large population when properly irrigated, but while Salt River will supply a great deal of water, artesian wells will be needed.

"This Salt River Ditch is a grand affair, and the Company is greatly benefitting the public while making a private fortune. The ditch has a width of 25 feet on the bottom, with very slanting sides, and a sufficient depth to carry, at least, ten thousand inches of water, which will be divided into two hundred water rights, one water right being considered sufficient to irrigate one-quarter section.

"The Company, last year, at an expense of \$22,000 made three miles of ditch, and now have six teams at work, intending to increase this number to twenty after harvest; they will have completed ten miles farther in a few months, which will give it a length of thirteen miles in all. The first six miles constitute the ditch proper, one right in which is valued at \$350. The other seven miles constitute an 'Extension'; parties wishing to use it, will have to purchase a right in it also. Then each person will have to convey his water to his own ranch in a private ditch or, perhaps, two or three will unite and carry their water together. As all this part of the valley inclines slightly to the southwest, the water can be made available on one side only. The land on the northeast side of the ditch will have to be irrigated by ditches taken out further up."

This canal was later referred to as the "Farmers" Ditch, and left the river at a point south of what is known as Hurley's Slaughter House, the main portion of the canal taking a north-westerly trend after leaving the river. It was completed in July, 1872, and during the second week of August, the stores, tools, etc., remaining at the breaking up of the camp, were sold at public auction and brought the sum of \$1089.00.

The Monterey was one of the smaller ditches, and in 1872 carried about a thousand inches of water. It left the river but a very short distance downstream from the head of the Salt River Company's Canal, and flowed practically due west for its entire length, about four miles. It was dug deeper and extended half a mile further in 1872.

The Mexican Ditch was also small, and like the Monterey its capacity was about a thousand inches of water.

The acreage under cultivation and watered by the ditches above mentioned, according to Mr. Barney, was as follows:

Swilling Irrigating Canal.....	4,000	acres
Wilson's Ditch .....	700	"
Juan Chiavria Ditch.....	1,300	"
Salt River Ditch .....	600	"
Monterey Ditch .....	150	"
Mexican Ditch .....	250	"

making a total of seven thousand acres, which was the entire acreage of land under cultivation on the north side of the river in 1872.

The following is a brief summary of irrigating conditions in the valley in the latter part of 1872.

Frank Rowe was engaged in taking a ditch out of the Verde above the McDowell reservation. This was the second ditch in that vicinity.

A new ditch, named the Buffum Ditch, had been taken out of the Salt River on the south side, near the Miller Ditch.

The Tempe Ditch had been dug out deeper, and a new dam had been put in, and it had otherwise been permanently improved.

The Prescott Ditch on the south side was repaired by the building of a new dam, and its channel was thoroughly cleaned out, and it could carry at that time much more water than formerly.

In the fall of 1872 the Mexicans living on the Mexican Ditch enlarged the same, were clearing land and preparing to put in a much larger crop than they had sowed the previous year.

A new dam had been constructed at the head of the Swilling Ditch, which had been thoroughly cleaned out, and which then carried an abundance of water.

The Watson Ditch, Maddox Ditch, Van Arman Ditch, and Mexican Ditch No. 2 had each been cleaned and improved, more or less, in preparation for the spring season of 1873.

All of these were main ditches which were fed directly from the river, some of which had several extensions and side ditches, through which the water was distributed over the country. These extensions and side ditches were all in good repair in the latter part of 1872.

The Miller Ditch, Savory Ditch, Rowe Ditch and California Ditch were not yet completed at this time, and were not ready for service until the following year.

The completion of the Barnum Ditch was deferred in 1872 until additional capital could be raised.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## PHOENIX AND SALT RIVER VALLEY.

PHOENIX LOCATED AND SALE OF TOWN LOTS—  
SALT RIVER VALLEY ASSOCIATION FORMED—  
MEMBERS OF—SURVEY OF TOWN OF PHOENIX  
—FIRST BUILDING IN PHOENIX ERECTED BY  
CAPTAIN HANCOCK—OTHER BUILDINGS—  
FIRST COUNTY COURTHOUSE—WILLIAM  
SMITH FIRST MERCHANT IN PHOENIX—  
OTHER EARLY MERCHANTS—RISE AND DE-  
CLINE OF BICHARD BROS.—DESCRIPTION OF  
PHOENIX IN 1871—BUSINESS CONDITIONS  
IN PHOENIX IN 1872—TOWN COMMISSION  
FORMED.

When the first Government Surveys passed over the valley, a few months after the arrival of the Swilling party, as has been before noted, they found a cluster of houses made of rude adobes, and cottonwood poles with mud roofs, comprising what was then known as the Phoenix Settlement. The first houses of a permanent character to be built by white settlers in the valley were erected near the Swilling Ditch at a point about a mile from the river. Among these were the houses of Charles S. Adams, P. L. (Jack) Walters, Lodovic Vandemark, Frenchy Sawyer, and John Hoague, standing but a short distance from the place where the lower road from Wickenburg to Camp McDowell crossed the Swilling Ditch, in the north-east part of section 12, Township 1 North, Range 3 East. With the advent of pioneers and settlers, the agricultural capabilities of the

valley having been fully proven, it was evident that somewhere in this immediate section there was destined to be a large city. The task of selecting the best location for the future metropolis became quite a difficult one, and required patient effort on the part of the settlers before a satisfactory site could be agreed upon. The first written information regarding such efforts is contained in some correspondence from the Phoenix Settlement, under date of August 13th, 1870, appearing in the "Miner" from which is taken the following:

"Two towns have been laid off within a week, but of the particulars I am not advised."

This reference to the laying out of two towns could only relate to the preliminary plans, and was really the commencement of the contest between what was known as Mill City, or East Phoenix, and West Phoenix, where the town was finally located.

In a letter from Phoenix under date of October 17th, 1870, we have the following definite information.

"Phoenix, A. T., Oct. 17, 1870.

"Editor 'Citizen':—

"The citizens of this place had a meeting on the 15th instant, for the purpose of deciding the location of a townsite. A regular election was held and the place occupied by Messrs. McKinnie and Carpenter was selected. It is the intention to proceed at once and obtain a title to the land from the Government, and dispose of the lots to actual settlers."

The above relates to a site chosen by a large number of settlers, which later proved unsatisfactory to many of those interested. Further

meetings and conferences were, therefore, held for the purpose of coming to some more harmonious agreement.


The site spoken of above was about a mile east and a little north of the present location of Phoenix on ground occupied by James B. McKinnie and Cromwell A. Carpenter. After much discussion the McKinnie-Carpenter site was given up, and a final selection made of the present Phoenix town site by popular vote. It was charged by the East Phoenix people that the majority in favor of the present location was obtained through fraud, an account of which has been previously given in an interview with Neri Osborn. However, the result of the election was acquiesced in, and the new town was located on the present site of Phoenix.

In a letter from the Phoenix Settlement, under date of December 26th, 1870, which appeared in the "Arizona Citizen" of the 7th of January, 1870, is the following:

"As you do not seem to have a correspondent in this section of the Territory, I will write you sometimes when anything occurs worth noticing and making a short letter acceptable.

"We are a growing community, and we like to have the people know it. Our population has nearly doubled in two months, and the immigration does not seem to be on the wane at all. Several families came in during the last month, and the gentler sex is becoming quite well represented.

"Our townsite has been selected after considerable discussion, and with few exceptions the people seem to be satisfied.



“Judge Berry and other strangers who have examined it, are much pleased with it, and commend the judgment of the people in selecting the townsite. The sale of town lots occurred last Friday and Saturday, Dec. 23rd and 24th, and was a great success. Sixty-three lots were sold, at an average of forty dollars, the highest paid for one lot being \$140.00. Judge Berry had the honor of bidding off the first lot, after quite a spirited contest. Several buildings will be commenced within a few days. Wm. A. Hancock & Co. have the adobes nearly made for their store and will soon have a house up. Other merchants will erect buildings and move to the townsite in the spring.”

During the year 1870 the location of the site for the town was continually under discussion, and the settlers were divided into two camps. Major McKinnie, Carpenter, Jack Swilling and others, were in favor of having it laid off as previously noted, while the Starar Brothers, Columbus H. Gray, John B. Montgomery and others favored the present site. Hellings & Company wanted the town located around the flouring mill. The letter above noted was written about this time. To adjust difficulties, and after two or three informal meetings at McKinnie's saloon, the center for the community gatherings, a meeting was finally called at the house of Mr. John Moore, which brought order out of chaos, and also brought forth the town of Phoenix, now the capital of Arizona.

At this mass meeting of citizens of the valley, which was convened on the 24th of October, 1870,





for the purpose of selecting a suitable spot of unoccupied land for a townsite, a committee was appointed to choose such a site. This committee was composed of Darrell Duppa, John Moore and Martin P. Griffin, all well known residents of the valley, and all of whom favored west Phoenix. After due deliberation the committee recommended the north one-half of section eight, township one north, range three east, as the most suitable location for a town, and that said town be called Phoenix.

After the proceedings of the mass meeting were closed, this gathering resolved itself into an association called "The Salt River Valley Association," of which John T. Alsap, the father of A. Guy Alsap, of the National Bank of Arizona, James Murphy, father of former Deputy Sheriff James T. Murphy of this county, and J. T. Perry, were elected Commissioners. The articles of the Association were signed by the following citizens of the Phoenix Settlement:

Darrel Duppa,	James McC. Elliott,
Wm. B. Hellings & Co.,	J. P. Perry,
Barnett & Block,	Wm. Rowe,
Thos. Barnum,	Michael Connell,
James Murphy,	Daniel Twomey,
John T. Dennis,	Charles C. McDermott
Wm. A. Holmes,	Edward Irvine,
James M. Buck,	John P. Osborn,
Jacob Starar,	Andrew Starar,
John T. Alsap,	Paul Becker, and
Columbus H. Gray,	James D. Monihon.
Martin P. Griffin,	

The new town was called Phoenix at the suggestion of Darrell Duppa, and the name is not

only singularly appropriate, but even prophetic, for a new and flourishing civilization has here sprung up on the ashes of the old. This name was given by Duppa to the settlement along the Salt River Valley a year or two before. The name was applied to the townsite and was first officially used by the Board of Supervisors of Yavapai County, when that Board formed an election precinct here, designating it as Phoenix Precinct. This was at a special meeting of the Yavapai County Board of Supervisors, composed of John G. Campbell, Chairman, Gideon Cornell, member, and Follett G. Christie, clerk, held on May 4th, 1868, and at this meeting election precincts were established for the purpose of holding the County election on Wednesday, June 3rd, 1868. At that time Phoenix Precinct first appears upon the official county records with John W. Swilling as Inspector, and J. H. Davis and J. Burns as Judges, the voting place being located at Swilling's house.

When the commissioners appointed by the Salt River Valley Association received their instructions, they employed in the month of November, Captain Wm. A. Hancock to survey and plan the townsite upon the half section selected for that purpose, and by the 23rd of December, 1870, a sufficient number of lots had been surveyed to enable the Town Commissioners to hold a sale and so procure funds enough to prosecute the work of surveying. This work was necessarily slow, and frequently lagged for the want of funds, as money was very scarce, but by Autumn of 1871, the last lot had been surveyed and the Hancock map furnished, showing a town site one

mile in length by half a mile in width, divided into ninety-eight blocks. These city founders laid out the original townsite of Phoenix so as to provide for a large and populous city in the future. Washington, the main street running east and west, was one hundred feet wide, as was also Jefferson, the first parallel street to the south, and Center, the principal cross street, while all other streets were made with a width of 80 feet. With few exceptions blocks were laid out three hundred feet long, 12 lots,  $50 \times 137\frac{1}{2}$  feet each, to the block, with a 25 foot alley running through most of the squares.

The first lot sold was that on the southwest corner of Washington and Montezuma (now First) streets. It was bought by Judge William J. Berry of Prescott, for \$104, while the adjoining lot to the south brought \$40. The opposite corner, where Berryhill's store is now located, was sold to Captain Hancock for \$70. It was resold to Ellis & Company a few years later for \$8,000. The two lots first mentioned, Nos. 1 and 2 in Block 22, which at one time also belonged to George D. Kendall, an early contractor and carpenter, are to-day covered by a portion of what is called the Irvine Block, built in 1879, by Edward Irvine, an early resident of this city, but lately deceased, while upon the Hancock lot, No. 2 in Block 21, on the opposite side of Washington street, was erected in 1889 the Anderson Building, which is now occupied by the Berryhill Stationery Store and the Baswitz Cigar Company.

Judge William J. Berry, who purchased the first lot offered for sale upon the Phoenix town-

site, was a well known resident of Prescott, to which place he had come in an early day. He was a member of the first Board of Supervisors of Yavapai County, which had as its other members, James Grant and George Coulter, the latter having come to Arizona with the Walker party. Judge Berry was the first register of the Land Office at Prescott, and in October, 1873, became editor of the "Yuma Sentinel," when the publication was the property of Colonel James M. Barney.

In the "Miner" of December 10th, 1870, is the following letter in reference to the Phoenix Townsite:

"Scarcely a week passes that we are not called upon to chronicle something new regarding the growing settlements on the Salt River, in this county, all of which settlements are known and come under the name of 'Phoenix.'

"The Valley, one of the largest and most productive on the Pacific Coast, was once the seat of empire of the semi-civilized Indians of Arizona, as the numerous ruins of houses, water ditches, cooking utensils, etc., attest, and it may be that the seat of government of the Territory will soon be located there. Besides its agricultural resources, which are unexcelled here or elsewhere, it has great manufacturing resources, and, as manufactories must soon be established at proper points in this Territory, the founders of these settlements will be certain to pay due attention to the latent power of the immense volume of water which flows from Salt River, past Phoenix.

"In order to show how the Salt River Settlements are progressing, we print the following

extract from a private letter recently received from J. T. Alsap:

“ ‘We are having our town of Phoenix laid out, and I shall probably send you an advertisement before long for the sale of lots.

“ ‘Just now the farmers are pretty busy putting in their crops. The sweet potato crop is being harvested at present, and is turning out well. Some enterprising vines that were trying to get up a second crop of grapes this season, were nipped by the frost about a week ago. The crop, however, was good for a first one.’ ”

In the “Miner” of December 17th, 1870, appears the following advertisement, which is the one referred to by Mr. Alsap:

**“GREAT SALE OF LOTS**

**AT**

**PHOENIX, ARIZONA**

**ON THE 23rd AND 24th OF DECEMBER,  
1870.**

“One third of the purchase money will be required at the time of the sale, the balance when the title is made.

“Phoenix, Arizona, December 10th, 1870.”

In a letter dated December 29th, 1870, to the “Miner” and published January 7th, 1871, is found the following:

“As your regular correspondent is absent on other duties, permit me, for once, to occupy, if I do not fill his place.

“Our once little settlement is becoming a populous region. We number now between 500

and 600 souls, and the immigration does not yet abate. More than fifty people have arrived here within the last two weeks, and we hear of more yet on the road.

“Many of the new comers have located ranches and bought water rights and are commencing to put in crops. Others have bought town lots and are making ready to build. We have three merchants, one brewer and a hotel keeper, all preparing to build upon the new townsite.

“The sale of town lots which occurred last Friday and Saturday was very successful. Lots sold at prices ranging from \$20.00 to \$142.00. Sixty one lots sold averaged \$43.50 each. Judge Berry of your town, had the honor of buying the first lot at \$103.00. The Judge and Mr. Holstein have been very busy here the past two weeks, filing the declaratory statements of the settlers. He has now gone to the settlements on the Gila River, to give the people there an opportunity to file upon their land. He will stop here a few days on his return, to permit the people here, who have not already done so, to file their statements. Many of the new settlers will be prepared by that time to file their first papers. I am told by the Commissioners that there will be another sale of town lots in about a month, which will be duly advertised in your paper. I understand that Mr. Case, Civil Engineer, will be employed by Mr. Hancock to finish the survey of the town and make the plats.”

In the “Miner” of January 14th, 1871, is found the advertisement of the second sale of lots, signed at Phoenix on January 6th, by J. P. Perry as Secretary of the Salt River Valley

Town Association. This sale took place at 1 o'clock P. M., on Saturday, January 21st, and the terms of the sale were stated as one-third cash, and the balance when the title was secured from the Government.

An advertisement in the "Miner" of January 21st, 1871, gives notice of the third sale, which took place on January 27th and 28th. This advertisement is also signed by J. P. Perry as Secretary of the Association, and the terms of this sale were the same as those of the second sale.

Commenting on the above the "Miner" had the following:

"By advertisement in to-day's 'Miner' it will be seen that lots in the town of Phoenix, Salt River Valley, will be offered for sale on January 27th and 28th inst. Former sales have been very successful, and we learn that scores of anxious ones will be on hand to purchase lots at the forthcoming sale."

The number of lots sold at this sale is stated in the following letter:

Phoenix, A. T., Feb. 14th, 1871.

"To the Editor of the 'Arizona Miner':

"I have not kept the promise I gave you when I wrote more than a month since. The dearth of news has been such that I have not felt that I could make a letter interesting.

"We have had no earthquakes, waterspouts, hurricanes, or other physical phenomena that I could chronicle; neither have we had any weddings, balls, parties, or other amusements or gatherings of the people, to which the ladies come

out with their Sunday finery, and the gentlemen with their 'store clothes.'

"We are, in fact, a very sober, industrious, hard working people, and we have been, at least the greater part of us, hard at work putting in our crops and taking care of them. We have, not without much constraint, arrived at the conclusion that it requires hard work, and a good deal of it, to earn a livelihood in this Valley by farming.

"As we do not propose to starve, or to walk the world as our first parents originally did in the Garden of Eden, we must, perforce, knuckle down to it.

"Our valley never looked better or more prosperous than it does today. Without some untoward occurrence, that has no harbinger in the present, we shall harvest an immense crop of small grain the coming season. If our market does not fail us (and with the blessing of God and the help of our Good Uncle Sam, we trust it will not) we shall come out, after harvest, in good circumstances.

"Our town is improving, three new buildings being in course of erection, and others will be commenced as soon as the winter is a little more past.

"The last sale of town lots, though not as great a success as the first, was still as successful as was anticipated. Twenty-three lots were sold at good prices, and I understand that others have been, or will be, sold at private sale. Mr. Kirkland, one of Arizona's pioneers, I hear has purchased a lot and will commence building during the coming week. The Association has given



two lots for school purposes, one to the Masonic Association, and two lots to the M. E. Church, South. The Rev. Mr. McKean is preaching the Gospel of Him of Nazareth, to quite large congregations for this benighted country. I saw more ladies together last Sabbath than I have seen in one house before in eighteen months." ("Miner," March 4th, 1871.)

Referring to the sale of Phoenix town lots which was advertised to take place at "9 o'clock A. M. on June 30th, 1871," the "Arizona Citizen" of Tucson, printed the following on June 3rd:

"Phoenix town lots, selected with care at this time, must prove good investments. A year or two ago the land there was vacant; now it is a county seat of what will eventually be a populous county. It has the best of gold and silver mines to the east and north of it, and within itself has all the elements of a most prosperous agricultural and manufacturing community. The great overland railroad may hit it, and cannot miss it many miles. In a few years the whole valley will teem with grapes, oranges, lemons, figs, in fact, with all the principal luxuries of food, and the homes of thousands will be surrounded by shrubs, flowers, and most of the necessities and superfluities of life. Read the notice of sale of Phoenix lots, and make a good investment by purchasing one or more."

Three weeks later and shortly before the sale, the same paper had the following:

"Good investments may be made in Phoenix lots, a public sale of which comes off as per notice in the 'Citizen.' We have heretofore called attention to this opportunity for safe

speculation, and can only say again that we believe no better investment of a few hundred dollars could be made than in Phoenix lots. It is always safe to buy real estate."

Public sales of town lots were thereafter held by the Commissioners at varying intervals, until succeeded by the Trustees in 1875, but never with as much success as the first sales.

On February 13th, 1872, an official filing was made in the U. S. Land Office at Prescott, for the tract of land upon which the Phoenix Townsite had been located, consisting of 320 acres. This land was taken up under the provisions of the Townsite Act of March 2, 1867, and the Amendatory Act of June 8, 1868, and for some reason, not yet very clear, the official date of settlement was given as February 5th, 1872. On the 10th day of April, 1874, John T. Alsap, the Probate Judge of Maricopa County, acting as Trustee for the Salt River Valley Town Association, was granted a patent by the United States Government for the land occupied by the townsite, the total expenses in obtaining the same amounting to \$550, of which Judge Alsap received for his services, \$150.00.

In the early part of January, 1871, near the corner of Washington and First Streets, about where the Baswitz Cigar Store is now located, Captain W. A. Hancock began the construction of a small one-storied adobe building, which was the first structure of a permanent character built upon the townsite. It was completed in the month of February. Associated with Captain Hancock in this work was George E. Mowry, then assistant postmaster of the community.

The manufacture of adobes for this building was started in the month of December, 1870, just three years after the coming of the Swilling party. After its completion the County paid Captain Hancock a rent of \$10.00 a month for the use of the rear portion of this building, which was used for the assembling of the first County Officers. In this little house William Smith opened the first store in the town, in July, 1871. In November of the same year Holcomb & Hargraves rented floor space and opened the first butcher shop. The building was used for different purposes until the early eighties, when it was demolished to make room for a more modern structure.

Soon after the work on the Hancock Building started, ground was broken on the north side of Washington Street, about midway between First and Second Streets, for the construction of a small adobe building, which, when completed was operated as a brewery by former residents of Wickenburg. The Central Hotel, owned by Joe Thalheimer, now stands upon this ground.

Next came the small adobe buildings erected by Johnny George, located on the south side of Washington Street, just west of Cactus Way, where the Ellington Building is now located. When Bichard & Company's flour mill at Phoenix was destroyed by fire, George sold his buildings to that firm for use as a store and flour depot. From Bichard & Co. the property passed into the possession of George Loring, a watch repairer of the town, who started a small store there which was known as Loring's Bazaar.

These were the first three buildings erected on the Phoenix townsite, and they were all completed in the early part of the year 1871.

The mercantile firm of Murphy & Dennis were also among the early builders on the townsite, their property being situated on the north side of Washington Street between First and Second Streets, just east of the New York Store. Among the larger buildings constructed during this period was Bichard's flour mill, which was completed in July, 1871, and which, as nearly as can be ascertained, was on the south side of Jefferson Street, just west of Central Avenue.

The first county courthouse was erected by Captain Hancock and Jim Monihon, on the east side of South First Avenue, at a cost of a trifle over \$900.00. When completed in the latter part of the summer of 1871, it was rented to the county authorities for the monthly rental of \$45.00 and served as the seat of county government for several years. The first public school was conducted in this building; the first District Court for Maricopa County held its initial session within its walls, and it became the civic center of old Phoenix, where the early residents often met to discuss public questions. After its relinquishment as a courthouse in 1875, it was used as a Justice of the Peace office for many years. The old adobe walls were pulled down some fifteen years ago, and the building was completely demolished in 1914 to make room for the new two-story concrete building, known as the Walker Building, which now stands upon this historic piece of ground. Other buildings followed in the wake of these pioneer

structures, and it was not long before the village of Phoenix could boast of quite a little group of houses, mostly along Washington Street, in the vicinity of the City Hall Plaza.

The Prescott "Miner" of January 13th, 1872, contained the following letter:

"Phoenix, Maricopa County, Arizona,  
"January 3rd, 1872.

"To the Editor of the 'Arizona Miner':

"The holidays are past and have left nothing but the remembrance of the good things that we enjoyed during their stay, and, with some of us, perhaps, a little heaviness in the 'upper story' or a slight invigoration of our hereditary enemies, gout and dyspepsia. Phoenix indulged in a ball, and, for a yearling, it did pretty well.

"One year ago, to-day, Mr. Hancock was making the adobes for the first house in town, now we have a flourishing village with three stores, one brewery, three saloons, two boarding houses, two blacksmith shops, corrals, and a great number of private dwelling houses.

"We have a county jail (which in this county is a good thing to have), and a very respectable building for a court house. We have a flourishing school, with an attendance of about twenty scholars."

William Smith, as before stated, was the first merchant in Phoenix. On the 9th day of July, 1871, he rented the front part of Hancock's adobe building for \$25.00 a month. He came from California, and brought in his wagons a

small stock of goods. Mr. Joseph Wasson, then connected with the "Tucson Citizen," a weekly paper owned by Surveyor General Wasson, met Mr. Smith at Wickenburg while on his way to the valley, and thus noted the incident:

"At Wickenburg I met a Mr. William Smith and family, with teams, en route from Los Angeles to settle on Salt River. He had a stock of goods with him. Stocks of goods are nowadays quite a feature everywhere in Arizona." ("Tucson Citizen," July 7th, 1871.)

Mr. Smith continued in business until the latter part of the following year, when he sold out his stock, the major portion of which was purchased by the firm of Barnett & Block.

The next store established after that of Mr. Smith was by James Murphy and John T. Dennis, who had formed a business partnership in the early part of 1871 and erected a building and opened a store on East Washington Street.

The next business house established on the Phoenix Townsite was that of William Bichard & Company, whose business activities along the Gila have been heretofore noted. Soon after the destruction of their mill at Phoenix the firm opened a store and flour depot in the town, in the small adobe building which they had purchased from Johnny George. About this time they also opened a flour depot at Prescott under the management of Thomas Cordis, and, later, under the management of C. S. Adams, who, while on his way to Wickenburg, became one of the victims of the Wickenburg Massacre.

The Bichards conducted their Phoenix enterprises until the early part of June, 1872,

when they sold the contents of the store to the firm of A. Collas & Co., who continued the business until October of that same year, when they sold the stock back again to the Richard Company. The Richard Brothers, William and Nicholas, came West from Boston, Massachusetts, and settled at an early day on the Gila. They were popular throughout Arizona, and did much for this portion of the Territory by furnishing its citizens with good and cheap flour. When hard times visited the Salt River Valley in the middle seventies, and trade became dull, Richard & Co. closed out their business here, and the Washington Street building, which they had occupied, remained vacant for many years, the rendezvous of freighters and transient travellers of every description. Gradually the adobe walls became weather beaten and dilapidated, and finally the roof caved in. William Richard, the head of the firm, passed away, and his brother as administrator of his estate, endeavored to sell his Phoenix interests without success, money being scarce and town property a drug on the market. After settling his brother's estate as best he could, the younger member of the firm removed to San Francisco, California, where other members of the family then resided. Finally George Loring, without notifying the owners, took over the old building, repaired it, and opened his small store. Soon after his occupancy of the premises began, realty values in the town commenced to move upwards, and Loring communicated with the Richards at San Francisco, making them a small offer for their entire holdings in Phoenix,

which included the Washington Street lot; what was later called the Commercial Corral Block, and a couple of lots on Jefferson Street, just west of Center. The Richards, anxious to get rid of the property, and not knowing that it was of any special value, accepted the offer, and Loring came into possession of the valuable holdings for a mere song. Later, meeting with business reverses, he borrowed money from his mother, giving these properties as security and they eventually passed out of his hands. In the late seventies, Loring's store became a sort of commercial center for the town, and contained the postoffice, Wells Fargo & Company's Express, and, at its front entrance were deposited all stage passengers coming into the town of Phoenix.

By the end of the year 1871, the little village of Phoenix was well established. During the year 1872, however, really encouraging business activity became evident in the community. Many buildings were erected, and many new enterprises started giving to the townsite, for the first time, the aspect of permanency. During the spring of 1872 many shade trees, mostly quick growing cottonwoods, were set out along the streets, and although some of these died, enough still remained to give the town a green and cheerful appearance. Water ditches, or small acequias, ran along each side of the principal streets to supply the necessary moisture, and as the years passed these trees, umbrageous by nature, grew to an immense size, giving a dense and welcome shade to pedestrians passing



along the city streets. Their large and spreading roots, however, caused much damage to the sidewalks which were later constructed, as well as to the ditches alongside, and one by one they gave way before the march of progress until now but few of the old giants remain. It is said that James D. Monihon planted the first cottonwood trees upon the townsite on the 17th day of January, 1871. Verifying the extensive tree planting about this time, the following item appeared in the "Miner" of March 2nd, 1872:

"Phoenix is improving rapidly. Adobes are being made in all directions, and every person who owns a lot is planting trees around it, so that, if nothing happens, this will be a cottonwood city in a couple of years."

Speaking of Phoenix, the county seat of Maricopa County, a prophetic correspondent of the San Diego Union thus wrote his paper:

"Phoenix, A. T., March 5th, 1872.

"This is a smart town which had its first house completed about a year ago. Now it contains many houses; also stores, workshops, hotels, butcher shop, bakery, courthouse, jail, and an excellent school, which has been in operation four months.

"Lately hundreds of ornamental trees have been set out, which, in a few years, will give the town the appearance of a 'forest city' and will add to its beauty and comfort. When it has become the capital of the Territory, which it will, undoubtedly, at no very distant day, and when the 'iron horse' steams through our country on the Texas Pacific road, Salt River will

be the garden of the Pacific slope, and Phoenix the most important inland town. The Indian is now a nuisance, and the Sonoranian a decided annoyance, but both of these are sure to disappear before civilization, 'as snow before the noonday sun.' "

The following brief review of business conditions in Phoenix and vicinity in the month of April, 1872, is found in the "Tucson Citizen":

"But now let us take the improvements made within a year and less. A little over a year ago the town of Phoenix was projected. Now it contains four stores owned by Menassee & Co., Dennis & Murphy, Bichard & Co., and William M. Smith. Two saloons by John Roach and Cromwell A. Carpenter; a good hotel by John J. Gardiner, a brewery by Matt Cavaness, a bakery by Julius Bauerlein, two blacksmith and wagon shops, one by Ware & Ford, and the other by Frank Cosgrove, two carpenter shops, one by L. C. Kendall and another by Richard E. Pearson. The professions are represented by Edward Irvine and Captain Wm. A. Hancock, lawyers, the Rev. Franklin McKean, of the Methodist persuasion, attends to the spiritual wants of the people. No physician has yet settled in the valley. The purity of the atmosphere seems to prevent all malarial diseases, yet so large and growing a population requires medical services and, doubtless, a good practitioner would, at once, find encouragement here. Two free public schools are in operation, and the spirit, so far manifested, seems to assure their regular maintenance.

"Improvements are now going on about as follows: W. D. Fruiter is erecting a business house; Barnett & Block a store and warehouse; Columbus H. Gray a two story building intended for a store below and a Masonic Hall above; George Bertran a dancing and concert hall; James D. Monihon and Jacob Starar a livery stable; S. M. French, M. H. Hamilton, Jesus Otero and Tom C. Hays, are each putting up dwellings, and several others are constructing buildings."

The building of Jesus Otero, an adobe structure, stood on the northeast corner of Washington Street and First Avenue, where the Fleming Block stands to-day.

On Friday, October 25th, 1872, the following was written from Phoenix:

"Times are not quite as lively as they were some time ago, yet Salt River Valley is improving—the town of Phoenix is growing—and the people pursuing business and pleasure. In all parts of the valley new ditches are being made, old ones being repaired, and sowing has commenced. In the town, building is being pushed forward rapidly, and improvement is the order of the day."

The management of the Village of Phoenix under three commissioners selected from the members of the Salt River Valley Association, continued for several years. Most of the time of the first officials was taken up in having the townsite surveyed and conducting the first public sales of lots. During part of the year 1871, and in 1872 and 1873, the commissioners were

Martin P. Griffin, Chairman, John T. Alsap, and Captain William A. Hancock, who acted as Secretary. After the receipt of the Phoenix townsite patent, it became the duty of Probate Judge Alsap to devise ways and means for determining the ownership of the various lots which had been sold from time to time by the Town Commission since its organization in the latter part of 1870. To accomplish this result Judge Alsap, on May 30th, 1874, appointed a commission consisting of John P. Osborn, John B. Montgomery and Martin P. Griffin, which was to determine the ownership of, and place a valuation on, the different town lots. His order appointing the commission was as follows:

"I, J. T. Alsap, Probate Judge of Maricopa County, do hereby appoint M. P. Griffin, John B. Montgomery and John P. Osborn, commissioners for the Townsite of the Town of Phoenix, under and by virtue of Chapter 89, Compiled Laws of the Territory of Arizona."

On June 4th, 1874, the appointed members met at the office of William A. Hancock for the purpose of organizing. M. P. Griffin called the meeting to order, when credentials were presented and officers chosen, John P. Osborn being elected Chairman, and Captain Hancock, an attorney and resident of the town, Secretary.

The first meeting of the Commission after its organization was held on June 22nd, when it was decided that sessions should be held every successive Monday, commencing with Monday, June 29th, throughout a period of six weeks; that these sessions should commence at 10 A. M. and end at 3 P. M., and were to be "for the pur-

where the Casino pool hall is now situated, which belonged to C. F. Cate, there were no improvements of value in 1874; neither were there any improvements on Lot 12, now generally known as the Busy Drug Store corner, which belonged at first to James Murphy, and later to Miguel L. Peralta. James Grant, the stage proprietor, was the owner of lots 9 and 11, being the southeast corner of Center and Adams Streets, known to-day as the Heard Corner, but belonging to the Goodrich estate, and his improvements were valued at \$2,000. Lot 7, which belonged to J. H. Pierson, had no improvements, while Lots 1, 3 and 5, being the southwest corner of Adams and First Streets, where the Vantilburg Block now stands, and which belonged at that time to Johnny George, had improvements thereon which were estimated at \$800. On April 24th, 1875, the first assessment against town property was ordered by this set of commissioners, fifty per cent of the original price being levied against all town lots owned by private individuals. On March 15th, 1875, the Commissioners ordered the following notice to be published in the "Prescott Miner" and the "Tucson Citizen":

"Notice is hereby given to all persons concerned or interested in the Townsite of Phoenix, Maricopa County, Arizona, that on the 22nd day of April, A. D. 1875, the Commissioners of said Townsite will proceed to set off to the persons entitled to the same, according to their respective interests, the lots, squares, or grounds to which each of the actual or constructive occupants thereof shall be entitled."

Not long after the publication of this notice, the commission held its last meeting, on May 18th, 1875, when the following was entered in their minutes:

“And it is further ordered that, the business for which we were appointed being completed, we, this day, turn over, in accordance with law, the foregoing record, the accompanying list of lots with the names of the owners or occupants thereof, with the amount assessed upon each lot, and the plat of the Townsite with the value of the improvements upon the respective lots, and the names of the owners thereof, to the Probate Judge of Maricopa County, and this Board of Commissioners adjourn without day.”

After the completion of their labors, the Commissioners transmitted their report to Probate Judge Alsap, who, in accordance with the information and data therein contained, proceeded to issue deeds to the various owners of town property.

The first deed given by him under town patent was to Jacob Starar, on May 18, 1875, and was for Lot 12, in Block 10, there being, on the same day, twelve other lots and parcels of town property deeded to various owners, among whom were Edward Irvine, James A. Young, C. F. Cate, Julius A. Goldwater, John Smith, Chas. W. Stearns and Morris Goldwater. In 1884, Starar's lot, on the northeast corner of Adams and Second Streets, was occupied by W. F. McNulty's private residence, while to-day, it is covered by the substantial brick building of the Arizona Republican Publishing Company.

## CHAPTER IX.

## EARLY HISTORY OF PHOENIX.

STORES — HOTELS — FOURTH OF JULY CELEBRATION — THANKSGIVING DAY — BIOGRAPHY OF J. J. GARDINER — BUILDER OF FIRST PLANING MILL, ALSO CITY HALL; VALLEY BANK BUILDING, ETC. — SALOONS — BREWERY — MATT CAVANESS, BIOGRAPHY — BARBER SHOP — PHYSICIANS AND DRUG STORES — BUTCHER SHOP — OTHER BUSINESSES — ANECDOTE OF WORMSER — CORRALS — FIRST LARGE WELL IN PHOENIX — BIOGRAPHY OF J. D. MONIHON — THE GOLDMAN BROTHERS — H. MORGAN & CO. — NUMBER OF SALOONS — DANCE HOUSES AND GAMBLING PLACES — THE GOLDWATER BROTHERS — GRAND BALL — MARRIAGE OF CHARLES H. KENYON AND MISS MOORE — DR. W. W. JONES, JOE AND MIKE GOLDWATER ATTACKED BY INDIANS — JOE GOLDWATER WOUNDED — JOE GOLDWATER FIRST POSTMASTER OF EHRENBERG.

To give with perfect accuracy the early history of Phoenix is a most difficult task. The printed records are fragmentary and incomplete, and the historian must rely upon evidence given by the few old settlers remaining, and the descendants of others.

The year 1872 marked a new area in the development of the future capital, and again I wish to express my thanks, particularly to James M. Barney, who has placed at my dis-







EDWARD IRVINE.

posal a manuscript which shows great labor in its preparation and in the accumulation of facts relative to Phoenix and the Salt River Valley during this most interesting period, as well as to James A. R. Irvine, Mrs. Mary H. Gray, Miss Caroline G. Hancock, Mrs. Laura B. Gardiner, and others familiar with occurrences during the early seventies.

In 1872 Heyman Menassee, a merchant of Wickenburg opened the fourth store in Phoenix, during March of that year. Edward Irvine, in March or April of the same year, opened the first book and news depot under the firm name of E. Irvine & Co. Mr. Irvine, at this time, was the regular correspondent for the weekly "Miner" of Prescott, writing, as a rule, under the *nom de plume* of "Bob." His pioneer news depot was located on south First Street, just off Washington, fronting on the west side of the City Hall Plaza, and was used by Mr. Irvine also as a law office, he having been regularly admitted to practice in the Territorial courts. Mr. Irvine came to the Salt River Valley in 1870, and was well known among the early settlers. He was the owner of what was afterwards known as the Irvine Addition to the City of Phoenix. In 1879 he built the two story building on the southwest corner of Washington and First Streets, now occupied by the J. W. Dorris Grocery Co. This was the second brick building in Phoenix, and was at the time the most pretentious structure in the town. Many of the professional men of that day had their offices on the second floor. The corner lot occupied by the building was, as before noted,

the first one sold in the town of Phoenix. Mr. Irvine left the Salt River Valley about the year 1905, settling in Berkeley, California, where he died in the year 1916, leaving quite a large estate in Phoenix. His oldest son, J. A. R. Irvine, accompanied his father to the Territory in 1870, and is still a resident of Phoenix, and one of Maricopa County's representatives in the first State Legislature. He was the junior member of E. Irvine & Co., and severed his connection with that firm on May 21st, 1875. Another son, Thomas, came to the valley about twenty years after his father, and at this writing, 1918, is a member of the well known corporation of The McNeil Co., printers and stationers, in Phoenix.

The pioneer hostelry of Phoenix was built and conducted by John J. Gardiner, and was known as the "Phoenix Hotel." It was a one story adobe building, constructed in the form of a hollow square, and stood at the northwest corner of Washington and Third Streets, where the Capitol Hotel is now located. This ground is still owned by the heirs of Mr. Gardiner, who are to-day among the largest owners and heaviest tax payers in Phoenix. In the early days this hotel was extensively patronized, and contained, among other luxuries, a curious swimming pool for the benefit of the summer guests. From the acequia along the west side of Third Street a small ditch ran into the inside court of the hotel, where it formed a large pool in a deep excavation, the overflow water finding an outlet in another small ditch which connected with the acequia along the north side of Washington Street. The pool in the court was cov-

ered with a canvas house, and in summer time the hotel guests could always enjoy a fresh cool plunge, a rare luxury at that season. Mr. Gardiner rented his hotel at times to other parties, it being conducted for a short time in August, 1872, by Steele & McCarty, and in October of that same year by Van Warren & McCarty. For many years after it was opened to the public, Gardiner's Hotel, as it was locally known, was one of the most popular establishments in the town. Its proprietor and his wife took a commendable interest in the affairs of the community. The "Fourth of July" celebration of 1872, is thus described by the correspondent of the "Miner" at Phoenix, under date of July 5th:

"But few people were in town yesterday. The great and glorious Fourth passed off very quietly. It was ushered in by a salute of small arms just after midnight, and a booming of anvils in the early dawn.

"When light enough to distinguish objects, a flag, the only one in Phoenix, was seen gracefully waving over 'Gardiner's Hotel.' This flag was made expressly for use on the occasion. Mrs. Gardiner provided an excellent Fourth of July dinner, while the lads and lassies held a ball in the evening, and so passed the day."

The correspondent of the "Miner," under date of December 17th, 1875, gave the following account of Thanksgiving Day in Phoenix:

"On Thanksgiving Day, the boarders at the Phoenix Hotel sat down to a Thanksgiving dinner, with a huge turkey served up in Thanksgiving style. The Hon. John Y. T. Smith with

Mrs. Smith at his right, and Judge Alsap at his left, sat at the head of the table and did the honors of the occasion in a Thanksgiving manner. Wit and wisdom flowed freely; wine and lemonade were in abundance, though the latter remained entirely untouched. At the end of the repast, the guests retired, we hope, with a Thanksgiving disposition."

Mr. Gardiner was born June 21st, 1841, in Gloucestershire, England. He learned the business of millwright and machinist, being employed in a flour mill at the age of eighteen. He came to America in 1862, arriving after a voyage of three weeks on the sailing vessel, "John J. Boyd." He first located in Omaha, Nebraska, and in partnership with Henry Clifford he bought teams and for several years was engaged in freighting across the plains. His first trip was to Salt Lake City, from whence he went to Montana and Nebraska. The Indians being very troublesome, and a constant menace to travelers, they only went in large companies, and though some were not so fortunate, Mr. Gardiner was never molested, and prospered financially. In 1869 he went to Los Angeles, and the following year came to Arizona, settling in Phoenix, where he died February 9th, 1905. For twelve years he engaged in hauling supplies from Yuma to Tucson, Camp Grant and Prescott, as well as to different mining camps in the mountains. In this service he had five wagons, each provided with ten mules, and frequently as much as six tons were transported in a trip.

During this time Mr. Gardiner invested largely in Phoenix property, among them the



JOHN J. GARDINER.



machine and blacksmith shop at the corner of Adams and Second Street, which was carried on under his supervision, and in 1886, the fine city waterworks plant was inaugurated, he being made president of the company. Wells were dug, and a well equipped plant was placed in running order. A stand pipe one hundred feet high was built; a pressure of forty pounds was maintained, and perhaps no other one improvement has done so great a service to the city as this enterprise, with which Mr. Gardiner was connected until the year 1890. About the year 1888 he organized the Phoenix Electric Light Company, of which he was president until he sold out to the present management. The fine modern works were built under his direction on Block 19. The first planing mill in Phoenix was built and operated by him for some time, and he also erected under contract the buildings known as the City Hall, the Valley Bank Building, which was then on the corner of Wall and Washington Streets and many other well known structures. In 1894 the largest flour mill in this Territory was built by him, and for six years he was at the head of the enterprise, after which he leased it. This mill was situated on the corner of Second and Adams Streets, and was three hundred by three hundred feet in dimensions, including the warehouse. All the latest improvements were employed in it, and it had a capacity of a hundred and twenty barrels a day. At this time Mr. Gardiner owned a fine improved farm of a hundred and sixty acres, situated about three miles from Phoenix. He was never a



politician, nor an aspirant for office. He was affiliated with the Republican party.

His first wife having died, he married in Phoenix Miss Laura B. Franklin, to which union two children were born, Charles and Mary. Mrs. Gardiner was born in Los Angeles and educated in Mills College, Oakland, California. Her father, Samuel Franklin, was a pioneer farmer of California, and for many years was a miner in and around Prescott, after which he settled in the Salt River Valley. A son was born to Mr. Gardiner by his first wife, who now resides in Riverside, California.

Johnny Roach was the pioneer saloon man of the town. In what was known as the "Old Brewery," Cromwell A. Carpenter operated a saloon in the early part of 1872, his place of business being located about where the Central Hotel, owned by Joe Thalheimer, now stands. In April of that year Carpenter retired from business, and was succeeded by Cavaness & Cosgrove, whose saloon was well stocked with favorite brands of liquors and cigars. This of course, became the favorite resort of those requiring liquid refreshment.

Cavaness & Cosgrove also conducted a good wagon and blacksmith shop in the rear of their establishment, where repairing and shoeing could be done "on short notice," and owned ox teams which freighted government stores throughout the central portion of the Territory. Aside from these enterprises they also managed what was called Phoenix Wells Station, on the Agua Fria, on the direct road from Phoenix to Wickenburg and Camp McDowell, which was

fitted up expressly for the convenience of travelers. In the old Brewery building where their saloon was located had been manufactured the first beer ever made in the Valley, by Abe Peebles, of Rich Hill fame, George Roberts, and others from Wickenburg. Matt Cavaness was widely known as a freighter, and at a later date his teams and wagons hauled much of the ore from the Silver King mine during the years of its early development. Frank Cosgrove, his partner, was one of the most popular men in this part of the Territory. He passed away at his home in Phoenix on October 13th, 1875, at the age of thirty-nine years. He had been one of the early settlers of Central Arizona, coming to this section in 1863 in the employ of Butterfield's Overland Stage and Express Company. In 1864 he settled at Maricopa Wells, where he followed his occupation, that of blacksmith, for eight years. From there he went to Camp McDowell and served as post blacksmith for one year, after which he made his residence in Phoenix. He was well known throughout the Territory, and his genial disposition made him many friends. His death occurred suddenly from congestion of the lungs, and cast a feeling of gloom over the entire community, where he left a wife and five children.

W. H. Pope conducted a well equipped barber shop at this time.

Early in the history of Phoenix there was constructed on the northeast corner of Washington and First (then Montezuma) Streets, a substantial adobe building by James M. Cotton and George E. Mowry. It was built in connection

with a store house belonging to Murphy & Dennis, which adjoined the Cotton & Mowry Building on the east. The following in reference to it is found in the "Miner" of September 21st, 1872:

"Messrs. Mowry & Cotton's new building on the corner of Washington and Montezuma Streets is fast approaching completion. This and the house of Dennis & Murphy are connected so as to form one. Sawed lumber is used entirely in the roof, and is found to be as cheap as and superior to the cottonwood poles. A piazza extends around it on Washington and Montezuma Streets and the weather boards are nicely painted."

The foundation of these buildings was commenced in the latter part of April, 1872, and the glass doors and windows for the Mowry and Cotton side of the structure were received by "overland freight" in the latter part of August, the lumber used in its construction being from the mills around Prescott.

The combination building fronted sixty feet on Washington Street and forty-five on Montezuma Street, the main portions of the old structure standing until recently, and housing for many years the old and well-known firm of Goldberg Bros., clothing merchants, composed of Aaron Goldberg, who reached Phoenix in June of 1875, and Dave Goldberg, a younger brother, who came to this city in December of 1876.

When the Mowry and Cotton building was completed, an old-time housewarming was had, which the press noted as follows:

“On Saturday evening (Sept. 25th, 1872), by way of housewarming the youth and beauty of Phoenix and vicinity had a ball in the new house of Mowry and Cotton. At the upper end of the dancing floor, on a raised platform, sat the musicians, a young girl with a harp, a boy with a violin, and a little old man, the father of the other two musicians blowing upon a flute. Between thirty and forty ladies were in attendance and gentlemen in abundance. Dancing was kept up until way in the night which, with flirtation, chit-chat, etc., made the hours pass away pleasantly. After the dance the party repaired to the Capitol House for supper.”

Messrs. Cotton & Mowry, when their building was completed, opened a high-class liquor establishment, and it was used for this purpose for many years. In front of this establishment in the early days, a unique, yet serviceable sidewalk formed of empty beer bottles, turned bottom upward and sunk into the dirt, extended around this old building on both the Washington Street and First Street sides. The partnership between Cotton and Mowry was dissolved on August 16th, 1875.

In May, 1872, Dr. Thibodo, from Wickenburg, and Dr. Forbes, from Tucson, located in the town to practice their profession in partnership. These were the first medical practitioners in Phoenix. Commenting upon the entrance of the two pioneer physicians into the professional life of the town, the following is taken from a letter from Phoenix:

"In case the Apache kill their victims outright, the doctors will have to follow the honorable profession of 'adobe making' for a living."

In the latter part of 1872, Dr. Forbes opened the first drugstore in the town in connection with his practice. Dr. Thibodo lived in Phoenix for many years, erecting the "Thibodo Building" on the south side of Washington Street, between Center Street and First Avenue, where he conducted a drugstore until his removal to California, in the later nineties, where he passed away. Before removing to California he married the widow of Johnny Le Barr, who had been assassinated on Washington Street by a man named McCluskey.

"Pete" Holcomb was the first butcher of the town, opening his shop at first in the pioneer building known as "Hancock's Store," in the latter part of 1871. He later took in a partner, E. T. Hargraves, the firm being known as "Hargraves & Holcomb."

In June, 1872, S. Granio, a gentleman from Sonora, Mexico, came to the valley and started a small store and butcher shop combined, in what was called the "Mexican Carriage Shop," and sold meat in competition with Hargraves and Holcomb. In October, of the same year, Copeland & Steel opened another shop.

From Elliott's "History of Arizona Territory," the following description of the first butcher shop in town is taken:

"The original butcher shop was kept by Pete Holcomb, in the little building that was doing duty at the time as Courthouse, Justice's office,

store, etc. It was in truth an original meat market, for Pete merely killed the steer, cut it in quarters, and hung them up. All customers had to cut off what they wanted, furnishing their own knives, and paying from twenty-five to thirty cents per pound for it. In those days only one beef was consumed in one week."

In June, 1872, Johnny George and Jack Walters completed a new adobe building, fronting 66 feet on Washington Street, between First Street and Central Avenue and separated into two compartments by a covered alley, one of which was used for a restaurant, running back sixty feet, and the other for a saloon, running back forty feet. A second story of frame served as the hotel part of this establishment, the second to maintain accommodations for travellers arriving in Phoenix. This was also the first two-story building to be erected in the town. The saloon was opened for business on Sunday, June 9th, 1872, the proprietors serving liquors and dinner free to all. The restaurant was opened to the public soon after, in connection with which they conducted the hotel. Their place of business was known as the Capitol House, and was a very popular retreat, George having charge of the hotel and restaurant, and Walters of the saloon. This building was located on East Washington Street about where the Capitol poolroom is now located, and adjoining on the west the little adobe store of Morgan and Dietrich. The main portion of this old building was destroyed in the great fire of 1886, which swept away nearly the whole of the north

side of Washington Street between First and Center Streets.

John George had been a miner in California, and came from that State into Arizona. He was a man of small stature and good disposition, being very popular with his associates. In later years he lived upon a ranch to the southwest of what is now the Capitol Grounds, the place being more generally known to-day as the Fickas Ranch. He continued to reside upon this property until the time of his death, which occurred in the early nineties.

Jack Walters, his partner, came to the Salt River Valley with the pioneer party of Jack Swilling, and continued to reside in the valley until the time of his death.

Barnett & Block, who had established a mercantile business in the Salt River Valley before the Phoenix Townsite was laid out, moved within the limits of the town about the middle of the year 1872, and immediately took a prominent place among the business houses of the town. They constructed a large adobe building on the southeast corner of Center and Jefferson Streets, which was torn down in the year 1915, to make room for what is now the Jefferson Hotel. This firm was one of the successful trading establishments of the Valley, doing a heavy business in government contracts, and the buying and selling of grain and flour. Their freight teams were numerous and were constantly on the road through Central Arizona. About the middle seventies, they sold out their interests here to the Prescott firm of Wormser & Wertheimer, who continued the business at the same location

for several years. After the death of Aaron Wertheimer, on June 20th, 1874, Wormser continued the business and was actively interested in various enterprises throughout the valley, principally in acquiring farming lands on the south side, and in time became very wealthy. At his death, which occurred about the year 1895, he left the largest estate ever administered upon in our local Probate Court. Charlie Goldman was the Administrator, and John H. Langston was Probate Judge at the time.

The following story concerning Wormser is reproduced upon the authority of Mr. Barney:

"While still around Prescott, Wormser, although reputed a shrewd and thrifty business man had, at one time, been very hard up for money, and had gone to his friend, Dr. W. W. Jones, of Wickenburg, for financial help. Dr. Jones loaned him a goodly sum on his personal note. Time passed, the note became due, and finally outlawed. Wormer's luck was still against him, and money was scarce. Then he came to the Salt River Valley, recouped his fortune by lucky investments, and remembered the outlawed note due Dr. Jones, who then lived at Tempe, and was often in Phoenix. Dr. Jones was a Virginian by birth, of proud bearing and distinguished lineage, who, at an early day, had sought his fortune in the west. Although a man of education and culture, when he reached Arizona he became as one 'to the manor born' and, in outer accoutrements, differed not at all from the hardy pioneers about him. Upon engaging him in conversation, however, his scholastic attainments and gentlemanly train-



ing became immediately apparent. He was a man of great kindness of heart, and was universally esteemed by all who knew him, and passed away at his home in Tempe about the year 1903.

"One day, while walking along Washington Street in Phoenix, he met Wormser, who, on this occasion, stopped him and said: 'Doctor, I owe you some money.' Dr. Jones recalling the loan which he had long since charged up on the side of his losses, agreed with him. 'Doctor,' said Wormser, after some hesitation, 'if you will knock off de interest on dat money, I vill pay you de principal.' Dr. Jones could be disdainful and scornful when he so desired, and, on this occasion, he merely looked with contempt at the portly merchant and, turning on his heels, walked away. Wormser, crestfallen, also continued on his way. Several months after the occurrence of this incident, the two men again met near the same place and Wormser again spoke to Dr. Jones: 'Doctor,' he said, 'If you vill come down to my office, I vill pay you dat money, both de principal and de interest.'

"Dr. Jones replied that he would do so, and, in time, visited his debtor, when he received every cent due him. After this episode no one could question Wormser's integrity in the presence of Dr. Jones without arousing the latter's ire, since he had a practical demonstration of Mr. Wormser's honesty in his payment of this outlawed debt."

In May, 1872, James D. Monihon and the Starar Brothers, opened the Phoenix Livery, Feed and Sales Stables on the northeast corner

of Washington and First Avenue, then called Cortez Street, and their advertisement stated that the proprietors had "constantly on hand plenty of hay and grain of the best quality; also a large corral for the accommodation of citizen and government outfits." In September of the same year they enlarged their accommodations as will be noted by the following:

"Monihon and Starar Bros., have just finished a large corral, back of the one they now occupy, three hundred feet long by one hundred and forty feet wide. Numerous other improvements are under way, which I will notice at some future time."

This last corral covered the half block of ground bounded by Center and Adams Street, First Avenue, and Broadway Alley, upon which are now located the valuable properties of E. H. Winters, widely known as the proprietor of the old Beehive Store, Charlie Donofrio, of confectionery fame, and others. It was claimed that this "horse hotel" could accommodate two thousand animals and two hundred wagons at one time. In October, 1872, the proprietors sunk a well on the premises in order to obtain a sufficient supply of water, and at thirty feet struck a fine, clear flow. This was about the first large well in successful operation within the townsite of Phoenix. Later Starar Brothers disposed of their interest in this enterprise to their partner, who, in turn sold out in 1875 and took a trip back east. He returned to Phoenix and, in 1889, constructed upon a portion of the ground formerly occupied by the stable and corral, what is now known as the Monihon Building.

Mr. Monihon, the builder of this substantial brick structure, was one of the best known men in Central Arizona. He came into the Territory in 1863 in Captain Joseph P. Hargrave's Company, "F" of the 1st California Volunteers. After his discharge from the army, he lived in the Prescott country for many years, and, in partnership with W. E. Dennison, was interested in the "Plaza Feed & Livery Stable" at Prescott, during 1868. This partnership was dissolved in October of that year, Mr. Monihon retaining the entire business, which he shortly afterward sold to Gideon Brooke and Jacob Linn of Prescott, the latter having been a member of the famous Walker Party. After working for a number of years in the mines around Prescott, particularly at Big Bug, where he was engineer at the mill, he located in Wickenburg, and on March 1st, 1869, opened the "Wickenburg Feed and Sale Stable." When in Prescott he was for a time employed as mail rider, an extremely dangerous occupation in those days, between the mining camp of Bully Bueno and Prescott, a country infested with bands of hostile savages. Leaving Wickenburg Mr. Monihon located in the Salt River Valley, where he met with deserved business success. As before noted, in conjunction with Captain Wm. A. Hancock, he built the first courthouse.

Mr. Monihon was an enterprising citizen, and at one time was Mayor of Phoenix. His widow, a daughter of Hiram H. Linville, who came to the Salt River Valley from California in 1876, with her father, still resides in Phoenix where she has managed with marked ability the extensive





GOLDMAN BROS.

property interests left in her keeping by the death of her husband.

In June, 1872, Miguel L. Peralta, a Wickenburg merchant opened a store in Phoenix and soon became one of the principal business men of the town. He had but limited capital, and his first place of business was located on the west side of South First Street, about midway between Washington and Jefferson Streets. Remaining here but a short time, Peralta decided to construct another and larger adobe building on the northeast corner of Washington and Center Streets, and when this storeroom was finished he transferred his business to it. Meeting with reverses Peralta sold his various interests, the Washington Street store being purchased by Messrs. Charlie and Leo Goldman, who are still residents of this city, and the oldest continuous merchants in Phoenix. After Adolph, the first of the Goldmans to reach Phoenix, had conducted his store for some years in the Heyman Menassee Building on Washington Street, where he had first located, he found that it was too small for his growing trade, and purchased the building which Peralta had left vacant on South First Street, to which he removed his business, where he continued in business for several years. As a merchant he was successful, dealing extensively, at first, in hay, grain and flour, when, deciding to visit his native land of Bavaria, he sold his mercantile interests to his brother Charles. The latter, after clerking for a number of years for C. P. Head & Co., at Prescott, had opened a small store in Williamson Valley, and had come from that place to Phoenix in

March of 1879, walking, it is said, behind a pack burro.

He conducted the business founded by his brother at the same location until he formed a partnership with his brother Leo, who had previously been in business in the town of Pinal, Pinal County. They bought the Peralta lot and store building on Washington Street, to which they transferred their business. For nearly twenty years they conducted business at this location, selling it in 1900 for the highest price which had ever been paid up to that time for a lot in this city.

When Leo Goldman first came to Phoenix, on May 1st, 1877, he clerked for his brother Adolph, remaining with him for some little time. When the great Silver King Mine of Pinal County commenced its wonderful record of production, Leo Goldman gathered together his savings and opened a small store at Pinal, then a thriving and busy little town some distance to the south of the mine. When the Silver King was in full blast, Leo Goldman enjoyed a lucrative trade from that mine, and when he closed out his business there to come to Phoenix, it was said he had a snug little fortune.

The Goldmans, during their years of business, have experienced many reverses of fortune. At times their losses have been great, particularly in the dry season of 1891-92. Their business was largely a credit one, and many men in this valley, now in independent circumstances, owe their success to the assistance given them in early days by Goldman & Co. They never failed to grant an extension and were, themselves, at times, hard

pressed through their liberality in extending assistance to their many customers. No merchants in the Salt River Valley are more thoroughly identified with its prosperity than Charles and Leo Goldman. They now enjoy a comfortable fortune.

The firm of Charles Goldman & Co., was continued for about twenty-five years, and the business is still conducted as a wholesale grocery store, known as, "The Goldman Grocery Co., Inc."

In July 1872, H. Morgan & Co., who, for a number of years prior, had been engaged in business on the Gila River, as has been noted, began the erection of a store building in Phoenix which was finished in the latter part of August, stocked and opened to the public. The following item in the "Miner" of September 21st, 1872, thus refers to this firm:

"H. Morgan & Co., have finished their new building on Washington Street, joining on to the new building of John George so as to form but one structure. A piazza extends along the whole front built entirely of sawed lumber, neat and tasty in appearance, and with the trees in front, their rich green foliage forming a natural curtain, it is a pleasant place in which to loaf."

Daniel Dietrich was a member of this firm which, in later years became known as "Morgan & Dietrich" their place of business being on a portion of the ground now occupied by Goldberg Bros.' new building (1918). They sustained a heavy loss through the fire of 1886, which, with other setbacks, principally inability to collect accounts due, caused the firm to finally collapse.



Henry Morgan, the senior partner, passed away in Phoenix in 1900, in straightened circumstances. He had settled on the Gila River many years before he came to Phoenix, and traded with the Indians on the nearby reservation, and also conducted a ferry across the Gila River on the regular road from Prescott to Tucson and Yuma, which was known as Morgan's Ferry. He became very proficient in the use of various Indian dialects, and often, after he became poor, acted as an interpreter in Indian cases in the local courts. He was a kindly man, of decided views and of few words, but with a pleasing personality.

In the month of June, 1872, there were fifteen saloons in Phoenix proper; one at east Phoenix, and another at what was called the Halfway House, making seventeen in all where the needful stimulant could be procured. Of this number eight dealt exclusively in liquors, while others sold it in connection with other merchandise. At the little village of Tempe Charles T. Hayden had a large store, and also kept a stock of liquors. Aside from these there were probably half a dozen pleasure resorts in the Valley, where cocktails could be had upon demand. For the amusement of the townspeople there were four dance houses, two monte banks and one faro table. Another of the latter was installed very shortly after the month above mentioned. Billiard tables did not reach the town until a couple of months later. The first gambling game to be introduced into the public resorts of Phoenix was a Mexican monte game, which attracted much attention and patronage. This was fol-

lowed shortly after by a faro layout brought from one of the older communities, which tended to divide public attention as will be noted by the following excerpt from a Phoenix letter dated June 14th, 1872:

“Opposition is the life of trade. A faro bank had been started in the saloon of George & Walters, which, for the last two nights, has thrown the monte bank in the shade.”

In the early part of July, 1872, the Goldwater Brothers, Joe and Mike, came to Phoenix to look over conditions with the view of engaging in business if circumstances warranted such procedure. At that time their principal place of business was at Ehrenberg, on the Colorado River, where they conducted a large store under the firm name of J. Goldwater & Bro., and to which location they had moved from La Paz, where they had established themselves when they first came to Arizona. Being favorably impressed with the outlook in the Valley, they purchased from Columbus H. Gray an uncompleted building which the latter was constructing near the northwest corner of Jefferson and First Streets, together with a couple of town lots. Mr. Gray had intended to use this building, when completed, as a Masonic Hall as soon as a Lodge of Masons could be gotten together in the town. The Goldwaters gave a contract to Pearson & Barber to finish the building, and to erect another alongside of it. Both of these buildings were roofed with shingles, at that time an expensive form of roofing, and were of stout, solid construction. Before the completion of their store-room the Goldwaters purchased a large stock of

goods from Hellings Bros., of East Phoenix (Mill City), as will be noted by the following item:

"We have just heard from reliable authority that M. Goldwater has purchased from Hellings & Co., all the goods which they had in their store. Mr. Goldwater will house these goods in town until he completes his new house and commences business." (Correspondence from Phoenix, July 26th, 1872.)

When Pearson & Barber had completed their contract, it gave the Goldwaters two large rooms facing on the southwest corner of the City Hall Plaza, one fifty by twenty-five feet and the other fifty by sixteen feet. On the evening of November 27th, 1872, a grand ball was given in these newly furnished rooms by Mr. W. H. Pope, which was largely attended by the ladies and gentlemen of Phoenix and vicinity; by Mrs. James A. Moore, Miss Mary E. Moore, Charles H. Kenyon and lady (who had been married earlier in the evening); Larkin W. Carr and Chris Taylor, from Maricopa Wells Station, T. W. McIntosh and lady, from the Gila, and a number of gentlemen from McDowell. The description of this event then states:

"The music by the Fifth Cavalry Band was extremely good, the supper, at the Capitol House, was excellent; dancing was kept up all night, and the whole passed off very pleasantly. Thanks are due Mr. Pope for his untiring energy in the management of the whole affair as well as the gentlemen on the various committees, and to J. D. Monihon in particular. During the night the bride and groom (meaning Mr. and Mrs. Ken-

yon), attracted much attention. The bride and her sister, dressed in white, moving in the giddy mazes of the dance, appeared visions of loveliness, and Mr. Kenyon, looking the picture of happiness, was pronounced the luckiest man living."

Besides the stock of goods bought from Helings & Co., the Goldwaters brought in from the outside between seventy thousand and one hundred thousand dollars worth of goods, and early in December of 1872, they moved into their new premises and opened their well stocked establishment to the public. When these merchants started in business in the Valley, they had in view the control of the grain output of this section, in which ambition they were more or less disappointed. While they had more financial backing than any other local firm and were able to advance quite a little money to many of the farmers, they were never able to obtain control of the grain market, and, after operating with indifferent success for two or three years, sold out their business to Messrs. Smith & Stearns, and removed to Prescott. Mike Goldwater was the manager of the Phoenix branch, while his brother Joe continued to look after the Ehrenberg store. Barnett & Block were their keenest competitors, and Mike Goldwater, being unpopular with the farmers, they were not only able to underbid him for government contracts, but were always able to fill their contracts at the stipulated price in spite of Mike's efforts to corner the market. Barnett & Block, however, conducted their extensive business in such

a haphazard sort of way, that they were forced to sell to Wormser & Wertheimer, of Prescott, who took over all their local interests.

The Goldwaters were good business men and once, when the company that was working the Vulture mine owed the firm some \$30,000, and had no money with which to meet the obligation, it turned over to them the property, which they were to work at their own expense until their debt was satisfied. Although the mine had furnished large quantities of rich ore, it had never, up to that time, proven a profitable venture for the stockholders. In the hands of the Goldwaters, however, with C. B. Genung as manager, it was a paying proposition. It did not take them very long to obtain their money. From this time forward, their wealth was well established.

The Goldwaters were natives of Poland, emigrating to this country in the early sixties. They came to the southwest with little or no money in 1862 or 1863, and here laid the foundation for a comfortable fortune. Morris Goldwater, a son of Mike, became a partner in the Ehrenberg firm in 1872, and came with his father to this Valley to assist in conducting the business here. When the military telegraph reached Phoenix from Maricopa Wells, straight across the desert and over the Salt River Mountains through Telegraph Pass, Morris Goldwater became the first operator of the Phoenix Station, which was located in Goldwaters' store. Of late years he has been prominent in the political life of Arizona, having been a member of the Constitu-

tional Convention, and a Senator from Yavapai County, during the second session of the State Legislature. He is, at present, the head of the firm of M. Goldwater & Bros., with stores at Prescott and Phoenix, the latter branch having been re-established in 1883, and is the oldest living merchant in Arizona.

In 1872 while driving along the road from Prescott to Ehrenberg, in company with Dr. W. W. Jones, Joe and Mike Goldwater were attacked by Indians. An account of this is given in the "Arizona Sentinel" of June 22, 1872, and is as follows:

"A party of three gentlemen, Dr. W. W. Jones and Joe and Mike Goldwater, all of Ehrenberg, left Prescott in the latter part of last week on their way home. These gentlemen were travelling in two buggies. They had not travelled more than fourteen miles, in the vicinity of Mint Valley, when they were attacked by a band of not less than thirty Indians, supposed to be the ever murderous Apaches. The three gentlemen could of course offer no resistance, and their only means of escape was to outrun them. The Indians pursued them for about four miles on the road, when, fortunately they met a party of whites travelling in the direction of Prescott, which caused the savages to abandon the chase, and, in their turn, to seek security in their mountain holds. During this cowardly attack Joe Goldwater was shot in the back, somewhere near the shoulder blade; his brother Mike, had two balls put through the rim of his hat, and Dr. Jones escaped with only a few bullet holes through his shirt and coat. They drove to Skull

lowed William A. Hancock on the 26th of September of the same year; next came James A. Tomlinson, post trader at Camp McDowell, on October 25th, and he was followed by E. Irvine who was appointed June 3rd, 1872. No further appointments were made by the Governor during 1872, but on February 15th, 1873, John T. Alsap was appointed Probate Judge for the second time.

In June, 1872, the first Chinese arrived in Phoenix. The group consisted of three males and two females, and they soon afterwards put in operation a Chinese Laundry.

The first town baker was named J. Bauerlein, who used a small furnace made of adobes for an oven. He became quite a feature of the town as will be seen by the following notice in the press of that day:

"On Tuesday last the town had no bread and the baker had a holiday because an innocent dog upset the yeast the evening before." August 9th, 1872.

"Our town has grown so large that the baker was compelled to pull down his oven and build a new one. On this account the bachelors have all turned bakers for the last ten days." November 22nd, 1872.

The first restaurant was opened by John Cady, who sold out to Tom Worden, one of the early county sheriffs, who soon after transferred the business to W. H. Pope, who also conducted a barbershop. In December, 1872, H. Hamilton also opened a restaurant.

J. E. G. Mitchell operated the first carriage factory, and James Grant, proprietor of many

## CHAPTER X.

## EARLY HISTORY OF PHOENIX (Continued).

FIRST LAWYERS—FIRST CHINESE—FIRST BAKERY  
—FIRST RESTAURANT—FIRST CARRIAGE FAC-  
TORY—FIRST SUGAR CANE MACHINERY—  
FIRST APIARY—FIRST MILKMAN—FIRST  
PHOTOGRAPHER—FIRST ASSAYER—NEWSPAPER  
CORRESPONDENTS—FREIGHTERS—BICHARD &  
COMPANY'S FLOURING MILL—DESTRUCTION  
OF BY FIRE—HAYDEN'S MILL AT TEMPE—  
JOHN M. OLVANY, FIRST POSTMASTER OF  
PHOENIX—OTHER POSTMASTERS—FIRST  
AMERICAN COUPLE MARRIED IN PHOENIX—  
GENERAL EARL D. THOMAS'S REMINISCENCES  
OF PHOENIX—FIRST WHITE CHILD BORN IN  
PHOENIX—DISPUTE OVER WHO WAS—FIRST  
AMERICAN DEATH IN PHOENIX—FIRST  
BUILDING BRICK AND FIRST BRICK BUILDING  
—SCARCITY OF LUMBER—FIRST MASONIC  
LODGE IN TERRITORY—FIRST MASONIC LODGE  
IN PHOENIX—FIRST ODD FELLOWS LODGE IN  
PHOENIX.

William A. Hancock, E. Irvine, John T. Alsap and J. R. Barroche (the latter a pioneer schoolmaster) were admitted to practice law by the District Court of Maricopa County on the 7th day of May, 1872. These were the first attorneys licensed to practice in Phoenix. The first notary public appointed for the county was Charles C. McDermott, of Phoenix, who was the first clerk of the District Court, and whose commission was signed August 7, 1871. Then fol-



Phoenix, or Mill City, W. B. Hellings & Co. were the agents of the "Miner"; at Wickenburg, Barnett & Block, merchants, and Abe Peeples, owner of the Magnolia Brewery and Saloon, were the agents, while at Camp McDowell the representative was James A. Tomlinson, the post trader.

In the early days all supplies coming or going out of the Valley were transported upon what is known in Western parlance as "prairie schooners," large freighting outfits drawn by twelve or sixteen oxen, or the same number of mules or horses. These freight trains came in usually loaded with lumber or merchandise, and for back freight carried grain, flour and other farm products. Among the best known of the freighters during the early seventies were the Miller Bros., Sam and Jake, of Prescott, Dr. W. W. Jones, and J. M. Bryan, known as "Crete," of Wickenburg, Cosgrove & Cavaness, Murphy & Dennis, Barnett & Block, and Charles W. Beach of Phoenix. A. Daguerre, Chenoweth & Fenter, Stanfield, Rogers, Garfield, Lutgerding, Elders, Hayden, and many others, whose names were familiar upon the highways of Arizona in the "vanished days." These continued until superseded by the transcontinental railroads and the railroads in and out of Phoenix.

Soon after the laying out of the Phoenix Townsite the commissioners who conducted the village government donated various parcels of city land to a number of individuals and societies, in order to induce the building or inauguration of needed industries. Among these gifts was the donation of an entire block of ground to William Bichard, a member of the firm of W.

Richard & Company, of Adamsville, for the construction of a flour mill. This piece of ground is, to-day, owned by George H. Luhrs, of the Commercial Hotel and is bounded on the north by Jefferson Street, on the east by Center Street, and on the south by Madison Street, while First Avenue runs along its western side. It is known officially as Block 64 of the City of Phoenix. The Richard Brothers began work on their Phoenix Mill in the early part of 1871, and on March 24th, 1871, the following was written from Phoenix:

“Richard & Co., of Adamsville, have commenced building a mill in Phoenix, fronting toward the Plaza, the Commissioners having presented them with a city block for that purpose. I understand the machinery will be on the ground by the first of June. Work on Hellings’ Mill at Mill City is moving briskly. After this harvest let us hope that we will have no more scarcity of breadstuffs.”

A Phoenix correspondent wrote the following in April 27th, 1871:

“Our town seems to be prospering as well as its most sanguine friends could wish. Messrs. Richard & Co. are pushing the work on their mill with their usual energy. We are looking forward to the time when we can get our flour ground from our own wheat. On an average the crops are very promising, and in twenty days the crops that are the most forward will be ready for the thrasher. The people are much better supplied with implements for harvesting than they have been heretofore, and we have reason to hope that the greater portion of the grain will be

secured before the summer rains will commence. Work is still progressing on several of the new acequias, and we shall have water in all of them in time for the next crop. When all of them are completed that are now under way, we can accommodate a population four times as great as we have at present."

The machinery for this mill arrived and was put in place during the month of June, 1871, and on the 4th day of July, 1871, the mill steamed up and made the first flour ever ground in the Salt River Valley, as will be noted by the following:

"From Salt River. Varney A. Stephens, of this place, returned home from Phoenix, Salt River, Thursday afternoon, and says Bichard's new flouring mill steamed up and ground the first flour ever made there on July 4th last."

("Miner," July 15, 1871.)

This event occurred several months before the Hellings Mill at Mill City commenced to grind wheat, and about a year before construction work was commenced on the Hayden Mill at Tempe.

The product of the Bichard mill was sold at the plant for \$6.00 per hundred, showing at once the beneficial results of home manufacture. This happy condition, however, was not destined to last very long, for, on the night of September 2nd, 1871, this first mill, after having been in operation about two months, was destroyed by fire.

The "Miner" of September 16th, 1871, had the following:

"From Phoenix. The flouring mill of W. Bichard & Co., at Phoenix, was destroyed by fire

on the night of the 2nd inst. Our correspondent gives it as his opinion, and the belief of the people generally, that the burning was the work of an incendiary."

The destruction of this mill was a serious setback to the citizens of the Salt River Valley, who had begun to depend upon it for all the flour they might need at a reasonable price, while the financial loss to the Richards was estimated at \$10,000. There was some talk of rebuilding this mill, but nothing was done in connection therewith. After the destruction of their mill Richard & Co. established a branch store in town, where they kept constantly on hand a large supply of flour made at their Gila River mills. Referring to the destruction of this pioneer mill, the following is found in a letter from Phoenix, dated Jan. 3rd, 1872:

"Our flouring mill, from which we had hoped to obtain flour so cheaply, has been lost to us for a time, but we entertain the hope that it will be rebuilt in the spring. In the meantime our neighbors, three miles away, are making a very fair article of flour, while Mr. Richard has a good supply always on hand in his store at this place. Mr. Richard made flour here last summer and retailed it, at the mill, for six dollars; since his mill burned down, he has hauled flour from his other mill at the Gila, and sold it at eight dollars, and this is as good as any flour that has ever been made in the country by any mill. I think that it is going a little too far to say that the new mill (Hellings' Mill) is making a much better article of flour than has ever been made in the country and selling at prices much lower than those for

which we have been previously able to get the same quality of flour, when we have just as good an article for sale in town at one dollar less than Hellings & Co. retail it at their mill."

The Bichard Mill was located on the Jefferson end of the block, the main building facing toward Center Street, and for many years after its destruction remnants of the ruined machinery could be seen on the ground it had occupied. It was run by steam, the same power later used to run the Hellings Mill. The building was of adobe. Some years after the fire the building was repaired and used for the manufacture of beer by G. Cecher. Still later the entire structure was demolished to make room for a corral conducted by George Hamblin, an old resident of Phoenix, who is still living in Phoenix.

This mill was in operation but a short time, but the owners complied with the terms of their original agreement with the Townsite Commissioners, namely, that construction work on the mill should commence by the first of May, 1871, and that the machinery should be on the ground by July of 1871. The terms of the agreement having been complied with, the Richards received a proper deed from the Commissioners for Block 64. After the death of William Bichard, senior member of the firm, the entire block of ground was bought from his estate by George Loring, as heretofore stated.

About the middle of the year of 1872, Charles Trumbull Hayden commenced the construction of a large mill near Hayden's Ferry, now the city of Tempe, which was to be erected on the south

side of the river and the third to be completed in the valley.

The Phoenix correspondent of the "Prescott Miner," under date of August 13th, 1870, writes as follows:

"John M. Olvany has just received the appointment of postmaster and the news is very welcome. There are several hundred of a population now, and it is to be hoped that they will be punctually supplied with, at least, a weekly mail."

George W. Barnard, postmaster at Prescott, took up the matter of establishing a postoffice in the Phoenix Settlement with the Postmaster General in 1869, but it was not until 1870 that his efforts were successful, when Mr. Olvany, as noted above, was appointed. He was postmaster for several months, when he was succeeded by Captain William A. Hancock, who had come to the Valley from Camp Reno during that same year, as is shown by the "Arizona Citizen" of March 18th, 1871, which said:

"W. A. Hancock, P. M., at Phoenix, in place of John M. Olvany, removed."

The first postmaster was a well known rancher, and in the Democratic Convention of 1870, at Prescott, was an unsuccessful aspirant before that body for a nomination to the Territorial Assembly. He took an active part in the construction of the first canals on the south side of the river, near Tempe, and was, for years, a prominent resident of that section.

When Captain Hancock assumed the duties of postmaster, he established the postoffice in Murphy's adobe store on the Tempe road, and, in

November, 1870, when Francis A. Shaw of Phoenix, first reached the Valley, the postoffice was being conducted by Captain Hancock at this location, George E. Mowry holding the office of assistant and doing most of the actual work. It continued to be kept in the store until removed to the Phoenix Townsite in 1871, where its first location was on the north side of Washington Street, opposite the Plaza, where Messrs. Murphy & Dennis had erected a small adobe building and opened one of the first stores established within the Townsite limits, into which they transferred the stock of goods formerly stored on the Tempe road. After the removal of the postoffice to the townsite, Mowry continued as assistant, and attended, as formerly, to most of the office work, his superior, Captain Hancock, being too busy on the outside to give much attention to the duties of postmaster. The office was small at this time and the emoluments still smaller. The office rent, clerk hire and incidental expenses were subtracted from the postmaster's salary. Subsequently the postoffice was moved to the old Goldwater Building, and afterwards to the Loring store. Its next location was in Peralta's store in the building afterwards occupied by Goldman & Co., on the northeast corner of Center and Washington Streets.

The first American couple to be married in the town of Phoenix were George Buck and Miss Matilda Murray, which marriage took place in the early part of the year 1872. In some correspondence from Phoenix, dated December 12th, 1872, is found the following:

" \* \* \* And the first American couple married in town was G. Buck to Miss Murray, who were married in Mr. Kirkland's home about nine months ago. ("Miner," Dec. 21, 1872.) This marriage is also referred to in the "Prescott Miner" of February 24th, 1872, which contains the following notice:

**"MARRIED.**

"In Salt River Valley, Maricopa County, February 13, 1872, by J. A. Young, J. P., Mr. George Buck and Miss Matilda Murray, both of Salt River Valley."

The bride was a daughter of William P. Murray, and the first of the Murray sisters to be married in the Valley.

The second marriage in the Salt River Valley was that of Charles H. Kenyon to Miss Sarah J. Moore, both of Maricopa Wells, who were married on the 27th day of November, 1872, by Probate Judge John T. Alsap; an account of the reception following this marriage is to be found in a previous volume.

General Earl D. Thomas, when commanding the Department of the Colorado, not many years ago, in the course of an official tour of the country, visited Phoenix, and the local paper in referring to General Thomas, said:

"The few hours' wait in Phoenix yesterday was spent mainly in shaking hands with old friends, for the General is a Hassayamper and the oldtimers all know him. His first acquaintance with Arizona was in 1872 when he was stationed at Fort McDowell. He left this country



then as First Lieutenant of Cavalry, and returned thirty years later as a general officer.

"One of his favorite reminiscences of Phoenix is the celebration of the marriage of Mr. and Mrs. Charles Kenyon in 1872. Mr. Kenyon, who was for many years a resident of Globe, died a few years ago, but Mrs. Kenyon, and her children, still live there. Mrs. Kenyon was formerly a Miss Moore, whose father had charge of the stage line from Yuma to Tucson, via old Maricopa Wells, a station situated near the present Gila Crossing, long before the railroad town of Maricopa was dreamed of. The wedding of the young people was celebrated in Phoenix by a public dance, in which all the swell society of the town and the officers from McDowell who chanced to be here participated. The ballroom was an adobe house with a dirt floor, and when the music started and the young people entered, the doors were closed and nobody was allowed to go home until daylight."

As to who was the first child born in Phoenix there is much doubt, and possibly the question will never be satisfactorily decided, owing to the length of time that has elapsed and the meagre records now extant dealing with that period. In the "Prescott Miner" of November 16, 1872, appears the following:

"Born, in Phoenix, Maricopa County, A. T., November 5th, 1872, to the wife of M. Cavaness, a son. This is the first American child ever born in Phoenix." This child is A. T. Cavaness, who grew to manhood in this vicinity, and not many years ago was a resident of Raymond, State of Washington.

In a letter from Phoenix to the "Miner" printed in that paper on the 21st of December, 1872, the following item appears:

"The first American child born in the town was a daughter of Judge Kirkland, now nearly two years old."

Evidently this was intended as a correction of the former notice, but it is an error, because Judge Kirkland came into the Valley in 1871, according to Barney, and commenced building a house on a lot he had purchased in Phoenix in February of that year. He later removed his family to a ranch which he had taken up near the Tempe settlement, where he continued to reside for many years. This daughter, who is said to have been born in Phoenix in 1871, afterwards married a man by the name of Pitter, and for many years resided at Tempe.

Mrs. Minnie Fenter Ashburn, of Patagonia, Arizona, claims that she was born in Phoenix on May 12th, 1871. She was the daughter of William D. Fenter, a prominent ranchman and politician of this section during its early settlement. Mr. Fenter came to Arizona in 1869 and first settled in Yavapai County, coming from there to this county. Many years ago he left here with his family for the southern part of Pima County, where a number of his children still make their home.

There was still another claimant for this honor as will be seen when the reader comes to the narrative of Thomas Thompson Hunter in a succeeding chapter.

In 1871 a visitor to Phoenix wrote that Mrs. J. J. Gardiner was the only American woman in

the village, there being at that time about seventy-five American men.

The first American to die a natural death within the limits of the town of Phoenix was the young daughter of William Smith, one of the pioneer merchants of the town. The incident is recorded as follows:

"Died—In the town of Phoenix, on Friday, September 27th, 1872, after an illness of two days, Casandra, the youngest child of William and Fanny Smith. Casandra was an interesting little girl, intelligent, pretty and affectionate, and the first American to die a natural death in this town. The community turned out on Saturday to pay a last tribute of respect to the departed, the Hon. Charles A. Tweed reading a chapter from the Bible, and making an appropriate address, thanking, at the same time, the friends present on behalf of the mourners."

The first building brick to be made in Phoenix were moulded and baked by a man named Few, whose kilns were situated south of Washington Street, about where the gas works are now located.

The first brick building put up within the limits of the town is known now as the Afro M. E. Church South, on the southeast corner of Jefferson and Second Streets. When first completed this building was opened by William B. Hooper & Co., as a wholesale liquor house, the late Philip K. Hickey (who died on December 19th, 1916,) being their bookkeeper for some time. At this time all the buildings were of adobe. Lumber was exceedingly scarce and very expensive, the little reaching the valley coming

from Prescott. In a letter from Phoenix, dated July 14th, 1872, the following is found:

"Lumber is very scarce at present. Old boxes are selling for 14 cents per foot, knotholes, cracks and breakages included."

For many years before the coming of the railroads to the Valley, coffins, a superfluity after death, were always made of drygoods boxes, the dead being extremely lucky to get even such a receptacle within which to make their final journey.

The first Masonic Lodge in the Territory was established in Prescott on July 25th, 1865. In 1874 there was a number of Masons in the Valley and the murder by Indians of Paul L. Mandel near Camp McDowell, called forth resolutions of condolence from the Free and Accepted Masons of the town of Phoenix. These resolutions, published at the time in the three periodicals of the Territory, were the first to be passed by Masons of Maricopa County in recognition of the death of a fellow member.

The first Masonic Lodge in Phoenix was organized about the year 1876.

The second fraternity to establish a Lodge in the Valley was the Independent Order of Odd-fellows, the first Arizona Lodge of which had been organized in Prescott in July, 1868, and the first Lodge in Phoenix was organized about the year 1878.

## CHAPTER XI.

SALT RIVER VALLEY PROGRESS; CHURCHES  
AND SCHOOLS.

FLOURING MILLS—CROPS — MARYVILLE — EARLY CHURCHES AND MINISTERS—REV. ALEXANDER GROVES — REV. FRANKLIN MCKEAN — DESCRIPTION OF OLD TIME RELIGIOUS SERVICE—EDWARD IRVINE DESCRIBES MEETING WITH PASTOR GROVES—QUESTION OF SUNDAY LABOR—QUARTERLY CONFERENCE OF METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH SOUTH AT PHOENIX—FIRST CHURCH CONFERENCE IN VALLEY — FIRST CATHOLIC PADRE—REV. CHARLES H. COOK, MISSIONARY TO PIMAS—SIXTH TERRITORIAL LEGISLATURE PASSES LAW FOR ESTABLISHMENT OF PUBLIC SCHOOLS — PUBLIC SCHOOL OPENED IN PHOENIX — BUILDING OF SCHOOLHOUSE — HAYDEN'S FERRY SCHOOL — CHRISTMAS TREE FOR SCHOOL CHILDREN — MISS CAROLINE G. HANCOCK, PIONEER TEACHER, BIOGRAPHY OF.

After the reclamation of the desert lands in the Salt River Valley had been proven a success, and an abundance of water for all lands under cultivation at that time was supplied by the river, the price of flour and of barley attracted the attention of farmers, and plans were made for the manufacture of wheat into flour. Flour mills were already in successful operation in portions of the Territory. In the early part of 1870, flour mills were producing a good quality of flour, and competing successfully in the local markets with

shippers of that article from California and New Mexico. The Agua Fria mill of Bowers & Co., produced an excellent quality of flour from wheat raised in the vicinity of Prescott; the Lamberton mill at Walnut Grove was also occasionally employed in making flour, while Richard & Co., of the Pima Villages, owned and ran two mills, one at the Villages and the other at Adamsville, which turned out quantities of flour and similar commodities.

The first two flouring mills erected in this valley were established on the north side of the Salt River. The largest of these, known locally as the Hellings' Mill, was located up the valley about three miles from the present city of Phoenix at what was then known as Mill City. Toward the latter part of February, 1870, Jack Swilling, in a letter from the Phoenix Settlement to the "Prescott Miner," referred as follows to the contemplated establishment of a grist mill in the Valley:

"The farmers of this vicinity have already sowed 1,200 acres of barley, and 150 acres of wheat, and both wheat and barley are looking well. The settlers expect that a flouring mill will be erected here next spring." The site for this mill was selected in August of 1870 and the foundations for the mill building were laid only a few months later. Work progressed slowly upon the plant for about a year. In the Tucson Citizen of January 7th, 1871, there appeared the following:

"The farmers are all busy putting in their crops, clearing new land, and making other improvements. The number of acres sown this year will be more than three times that of last,

and there will be an abundant supply of water for all. Wm. B. Hellings & Co., are laying a foundation for a flouring mill which, it is expected, will be completed before harvest." This letter was dated from Phoenix December 26th, 1870.

In the month of October, 1871, the freight train of Miller Bros., Sam and Jake, of Prescott, left that place for Ehrenberg on the Colorado River, to haul the machinery for the mill. This machinery had been shipped in deep water vessels from San Francisco to the mouth of the Colorado, transferred at that point to freight barges, and towed up the river to Ehrenberg, from where it was freighted overland to the Valley. Lumber for the construction of the buildings at Mill City was brought from near Prescott, and on their return the wagons were loaded with grain and other commodities raised in the valley, and needed to supply the market in and around Prescott with these necessities.

Toward the end of the year 1871, the Hellings Mill was in full blast, being the second to turn out flour from Valley raised wheat. Upon its completion the "Prescott Miner," under date of December 16th, 1871, contained the following:

"Good news: A great work has been completed in Salt River Valley, Maricopa County; nothing less than the erection of the finest flouring mill this side of San Francisco, which was put up at a cost of nearly \$70,000 through the praiseworthy energy of Wm. B. Hellings & Co. This mill, we learn by letter from John W. Swilling, is now making flour of excellent quality."

W. B. Hellings & Co., the firm who erected this mill, was composed of C. H. Grubb, E. W. Grover, Wm. B. Hellings and Edward E. Hellings, the latter becoming the superintendent of the completed enterprise. The building on the premises at Mill City consisted of a large, well furnished adobe store; comfortable residences for owners and employees, and the flouring mill, which was a large, three-story building, well roofed with lumber and shingles brought from the Prescott country. The walls of this building, excepting the portions upon which the heavy timbers rested, were formed of adobe, and were of great strength and thickness. The woodwork was also strong, and the machinery was the best that could be procured at that day in San Francisco. A forty-eight horse power engine was required to drive this machinery, and the mill had two runs of stone and could turn out at least thirty thousand pounds of flour daily. It took more than a year to complete the mill and the two granaries adjoining it, which had a storage capacity of a hundred and fifty thousand pounds of grain. The entire cost was nearly \$75,000. The construction work was done by residents of Arizona under the direction of a Mr. Henderson, who had spent a lifetime in building and running flour mills.

The demand for flour from the Hellings Mill was, during the first year of its operation, greater than the supply. Two grades of flour were made, the best being sold for eight cents per pound at the mill, and the second quality for seven cents; "semetilla" a coarser product, was sold for five cents, and bran for three cents. The




greatest quantity of flour made in one day during the season of 1872 was 16,784 pounds, besides semetilla and bran, while the output rarely fell short of 10,000 pounds. As the valley adjacent to the mill contained no trees, fuel for the mill, which was operated by steam power, was hauled from the mesquite country below, near the present site of Phoenix. The first large contract to be taken by Hellings & Co., after the completion of their mill, was for supplying the military posts north of the Gila including McDowell, Date Creek, Hualapai, Verde and Whipple, with flour, from January 1st, 1872, to July 1st of the same year. This contract had been previously awarded to Bichard Bros., of Adamsville, but was later annulled and given to their recently established competitors. The Hellings plant was known as the Salt River Flouring Mill, and its Territorial Agents were Hellings & Veil at Prescott, Barnett & Block, at Wickenburg, Moore & Carr at Maricopa Wells, and E. N. Fish & Co., at Florence and Tucson. Nothing remains to mark the spot where the Hellings Mill was erected forty-five years ago, except the crumbling walls of the old building which, so far, the ravages of time have failed to totally obliterate.

Near the north bank of the Salt River, about opposite the Mormon town of Lehi, was located in early days the little settlement of Maryville, often called Rowe's Station. The founder of Maryville was William Rowe, a sturdy rancher who came to the Valley in 1868. Mr. Rowe built the station on the main travelled road from the Gila to Camp McDowell, and there domiciled his large family. Several hostile Apache tribes,

were dangerously near to Mr. Rowe, but, like many other pioneers, he took his chances. Under trying conditions Mr. Rowe commenced the digging of a ditch to reclaim the fertile lands about the station, but it was uphill work and many years slipped by before Rowe's Ditch, as it was at first called, could be utilized for the carrying of water. Raid after raid was made by the savages upon his slender possessions, but he held on to his home for many years. Equally courageous neighbors came in time to dwell beside him, but the little settlement was hardly ever free from Indian attacks. On May 15th, 1870, Indians stole all the stock, eight or nine head, mostly cows, owned by Thomas Shortell, one of Mr. Rowe's neighbors. This rancher had at one time been a soldier at Camp McDowell, had a large family to support, and his loss, therefore, was very severe. A few days later Indians took all the stock, cows and oxen, belonging to Mr. Rowe. Rowe had at this time a family of eight little children, and his principal means of support for himself and family was upon the milk he sold, and the hay which he hauled with his oxen, to supply the market in other localities. The loss occasioned by this raid left him almost destitute, with a large family to support as best he could. On March 28th, 1874, Indians again raided the little settlement, robbing Mr. Rowe of all his mules and Joseph Cox, one of his neighbors, of his only horse.

In 1873 times were very lively at Maryville. The Maryville Irrigating Canal, which was eighteen feet wide on the top, and ten feet on the bot-

tom, was being pushed to completion and was designed to carry ten thousand inches of water. At this time the settlement of Maryville consisted, in a business way, of a store and hotel, as well as blacksmith, carpenter and paint shops. About May, 1873, the progress of Maryville had become so pronounced that a postoffice was established with Charles Whitlow as the first postmaster. To show its advancement in a social way, it is only necessary to state that on the evening of July 21st, 1873, an up-to-date theatrical performance was given by the Maryville Amateur Troupe, composed of Dr. T. J. Wilson, Mr. and Mrs. Ben Davis, and the Misses Mollie and Sierra Nevada Whitlow, daughters of Charles Whitlow, who had come to the settlement from California. Mr. Wilson had been a school teacher in San Bernardino, California, whence he had come to the Salt River Valley, on July 20, 1872, with an armful of testimonials. Upon reaching the valley he stayed in Phoenix but a short time, soon continuing his journey to Rowe's Station. A man who had given his name as Thomas Maxwell had been stopping at this station and, on the evening of July 22nd, robbed Wilson, the schoolteacher, as well as Charlie Whitlow. The next morning Mr. Rowe and his son followed the thief across the desert, and he, when overtaken, commenced to shoot at the pursuers without effect. Rowe and his son returned the fire and wounded Maxwell so severely that he capitulated. He was removed to the station as soon as possible, where he had



the attendance of a doctor and all other aid available, but to no purpose, as he died the next night.

One of the first shooting scrapes to take place at the "Maryville Crossing of Salt River," as the place was sometimes called, occurred on February 1st, 1873, when James C. Beatty was killed by Richard McGregor. The trouble began in a wordy dispute, Beatty making the first move to shoot, but getting the worst of it. McGregor came out of the encounter uninjured, and afterwards surrendered himself to the authorities at Phoenix. He was exonerated.

When Camp McDowell was abandoned as a military post, the travel along the road passing by Maryville Station became uncertain, and finally of no importance whatever. With the decline of the McDowell country as a centre of military activity, the gradual abandonment of Maryville took place, its sturdy settlers going to more active localities. Some twenty-five years ago an old adobe ruin, near the deep worn McDowell road, still marked the site of Maryville, one more of the vanished settlements of Arizona.

The Methodist Episcopal Church South, was the first Protestant organization to establish itself permanently in the Salt River Valley. The first regularly ordained minister of this church appointed for Arizona was the Rev. Alexander Groves.

This was in 1870, soon after the Los Angeles Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and almost immediately the reverend gentleman set out for Prescott, Arizona, the future field of his labors. He made the journey across the desert from California on

horseback in the company of the late Edward Irvine. After reaching Arizona he rested a few days in the Phoenix Settlement, then a prosperous community, before proceeding to Prescott. At this stopping place he met with the kindest of treatment and the information was furnished him that a church would soon be erected in the Valley and that the services of a good minister would be required. From Phoenix this pioneer minister continued his journey to Prescott, which he reached on the evening of Tuesday, December 13th, 1870, where he found almost virgin religious ground awaiting well directed effort.

In February, 1871, the Rev. Franklin McKean, another minister of the same denomination, arrived in Phoenix, and immediately began his work. As was said at the time, the settlers were "pleased to know that this church will hereafter take great interest in our spiritual welfare." The Rev. McKean gradually aroused interest throughout the Valley in religious work and preached to appreciative audiences at whatever ranch house seemed most convenient. From the time of his arrival concerted religious effort in the Salt River Valley may be said to date, and it has never been dormant since.

In October, 1871, the Rev. Groves left Prescott for California, to attend the annual conference. During his stay in Prescott he had been able to establish a church organization, but he did not return to that place as the Conference sent him to the Salt River Valley, where he was afterwards held in high esteem. After his departure from Prescott Chaplain Gilmore, of Fort Whipple, and Chaplain White, of Camp Verde, con-

tinued to preach sermons at the courtroom in Prescott on Sundays.

When the Rev. Groves reached the Salt River Valley, he took up his abode upon a ranch, farming and preaching alternately. With his coming the Valley, for a time, had two preachers, as the Rev. McKean was still in this vicinity. Until an adobe building of fairly good size was completed in Phoenix on the southwest corner of Center and Monroe Streets, most of the early Methodist services were held in the open air, or under the shade of brush "ramadas" in various parts of the Valley. The following is a good description of an old time religious service, held at "Bar-num's Grove," north of Phoenix:

"Parson Groves held religious meetings Friday and Saturday evenings, and three separate services on Sunday (September 15th, 1872), in the pleasant grove on the ranch of Thomas Barnum. During the Sunday services quite a number attended from Phoenix. After morning service an impromptu table was arranged, and an excellent dinner, gotten up by Mrs. John Osborn, Mrs. Griffin, Mrs. Thomas Barnum, and Mrs. Rodgers, was served to the visitors, who did ample justice to the viands. The intervals between the services were occupied in singing and recreation. Those who lingered to the last sat down to a pleasant supper with Mrs. Barnum, and all departed much pleased with the day's proceedings."

The pioneer preachers, like the early schoolmasters in Arizona, found much difficulty in obtaining sufficient financial aid to meet their daily

wants as the struggling settlers among whom they lived could help them but little.

In September, 1872, Edward Irvine made a trip from Phoenix to Tempe, and in returning by the south side road, thus described a meeting with the Rev. Groves:

"All along, as I went, I passed excellent farms which bore evidence of having produced abundant crops the year past, and of active preparations being made for extensive sowing during the coming season. On Hiltibrand's ranch, I surprised Parson Groves, black as a negro, busy with fork and axe, clearing off the mesquite brush. The parson works thus during the week, and preaches at Phoenix nearly every Sunday, and, occasionally down at Mesquite and up at Barnum's Grove, walking backwards and forwards a distance of ten or twelve miles each way."

This teacher of the gospel would also take loads of potatoes and other products raised in the valley to the Bradshaw Mountains for barter among the miners and prospectors of that region. He made his living in this way, but everywhere he went he preached the doctrine of friendship, charity, and love, more like the Peter Cartwrights of the West than the well-paid preachers of to-day. He was conscientious and adhered strictly to his interpretation of the spiritual laws as laid down in the Bible.

In the middle seventies the question of Sunday labor came up in the Valley, and caused some discussion and some feeling among the church brethren. In a correspondence from Phoenix, under date of January 26th, 1875, the following is found:

"The public school is now open under the management of Miss Nellie Shaver. The Sabbath school is conducted by the Rev. Mr. Groves, in the absence of Miss Florence Tweed, who is on a visit to Tucson. The Rev. S. M. F. Herrett announced from the pulpit yesterday forenoon that until further notice, there would be no more church services on Sunday morning because the people are so busy working, thus virtually approving of Sunday labor. In the evening, Mr. Groves announced from the pulpit that he would hold services, himself, every Sabbath in the forenoon. Parson Groves has always been a firm standby in the church, and now when Godliness is on the decline, refuses to go over and join the world, but bravely rears the banner of the Cross and stands firmly at his post."

In the year 1873 the Methodist Episcopal Church South was regularly organized by the Rev. Groves. On the 15th day of May, of the same year, the Phoenix Townsite Commissioners, Messrs. Griffin, Alsap and Hancock, donated to the Church, Lots 8, 9, 10, 11 and 12, in Block 65, the certificates of donation being made out to W. H. Franklin, Edward Irvine, Major Charles H. Veil, Capt. William A. Hancock, and G. A. Reuter, as trustees. These lots, however, were not built upon until 1878.

One of the most successful church gatherings of the early days was the quarterly conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, which was held at Phoenix in the courthouse, commencing on Friday evening, December 5th, 1873, and closing on the following Sunday evening. The attendance was very good in spite of rain and mud.



On Sunday evening the house was full—half the congregation, at least, being ladies—at which time the sacrament was administered. On Sunday, December 7th, the Sunday School was reorganized. Although the library was, at that time, small, two ladies each promised a donation of books to it. On the evening of December 8th, after the close of the conference, the Rev. A. B. Gill lectured at the courthouse on "Theology." The Rev. Gill, a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, had reached the valley from California on November 22nd, 1873, with the intention of residing in Phoenix for some time. The first Church Conference ever held in the valley was that of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, at the "Mesquite" in May, 1872, and lasted four days.

Forty years have made a great change in the religious life in Phoenix. Many, if not all, the denominations are represented, and the ministers are not compelled, as Parson Groves was, to toil for his bread, and preach the gospel without remuneration. His successors suffer no hardships, nor through the sweat of their brow earn their daily bread, laboring from sunrise to sunset, but are employed at liberal salaries, and speak to fashionable audiences, in costly edifices, comfortably and luxuriously furnished, which are now scattered over the city in all directions.

The first Catholic Padre to come into this section was in 1872. He held a "misa" in the valley on Sunday, April 12th, 1872, and one in the town of Phoenix on the Tuesday following. Having performed his pastoral duties in Phoenix, he visited the settlement around Tempe,

which was then a prosperous community. This priest came to the valley from the Florence Settlement, where he was regularly established in charge of a large number of Catholics residing in that vicinity. Phoenix at that time was a place of secondary importance to Florence, from a religious standpoint, and until a permanent parish was established at the former place, Catholic priests from Florence continued to make frequent visits to the settlers of their faith in the Salt River Valley.

The Rev. Charles H. Cook, a minister of the Presbyterian Church, began his work as a teacher and missionary to the Pimas in the year 1871, and continued to occupy this field with great success for many years thereafter. An account of his labors will be given in a future volume.

In the early days of the settlement of the Salt River Valley, there were but few children of school age and the need of public schools was not pressing, but as the population increased, and with it the influx of many families, it became evident that schools would have to be established, not only for the resident boys and girls, but also as an inducement to encourage further immigration into the valley. The first intimation that the settlers desired educational facilities for their children is contained in a brief paragraph written from the Salt River Valley August 13th, 1870, and appearing in the "Prescott Miner" of August 27th, following:

"The citizens are anxious for a school, and intend to have one as soon as possible, both for their own convenience and as a strong induce-

ment for outside families." It was more than a year, however, before this was accomplished.

In the early part of 1871, the Sixth Territorial Legislature passed a new law for the establishment of public schools throughout Arizona, which will be found in a succeeding chapter under the head of Territorial Legislation, and which contained the following provisions:

"The public school year shall commence on the first day of January, and end on the last day of December. No school district shall be entitled to receive any portion of the public school moneys in which there shall not have been taught a public school, for at least three months, within the year ending the last day of December previous."

In order to meet this requirement the residents of Phoenix and vicinity opened in the latter part of the year 1871, a semi-public school, sustained by private contributions. This school was held in the first county courthouse which had been completed only a month or two before, on South First Avenue, just off Washington Street. January 1st, 1872, it became a real public school, as from that time it was maintained by direct taxation as proposed by the new school law. John T. Alsap, Probate Judge of Maricopa County, was ex-officio county superintendent of Schools, and the following is condensed from the first report he made to Governor Safford, at the time ex-officio Territorial Superintendent of Public Instruction:

On January 1st, a public school was opened, and the first term of three months closed on March 22nd, J. R. Darroche being the teacher

to preside over the destinies of this pioneer school. The average attendance for the quarter was twenty-five. Judge Alsap very properly visited the school several times during the term, and on the day it closed, and was much pleased at the evident "improvement of the scholars." Maricopa County's share of the first money raised by taxation for the support of this school was exhausted on the one term, but a subscription was started, and funds for another quarter promptly raised, the second quarter commencing on April 1st. This school was located in District No. 1, then including the whole county of Maricopa, which had been created by order of the Board of Supervisors, on the 15th day of May, 1871. Shortly after the opening of the school in District No. 1, a petition of citizens living too far below Phoenix to share in the benefits of the school there, was presented to County Superintendent Alsap, who endorsed the views of the petitioners and presented the petition to the Board of Supervisors, who were urged to form another school district. On the 11th day of March, 1872, the Board created District No. 2 as requested. A small schoolhouse had already been erected by the petitioners, the first to be built in the county, and a school term was commenced on April 1st, under the supervision of Mr. E. M. Johnson as teacher. This was known as the "Mesquite School," and the first trustees appointed by the school superintendent, were Matthew R. Morrell, A. B. Sorrells, and S. S. Stroud.

In closing his report Judge Alsap said: "The people generally seem to be interested in keeping

the schools up, and the probabilities are that a school will be kept at Phoenix for nine months, at least, of the year 1872."

In commenting upon Judge Alsap's report, the "Tucson Citizen" of April 6th, 1872, editorially said:

"The liberality shown in maintaining free schools in Salt River Valley, is in the highest degree worthy of imitation all over the Territory, and, we believe, will prevail. We freely accord much credit to Judge Alsap for the splendid progress of the free school system at Phoenix, but, by his own report, he shows how well the citizens there second all his efforts. He makes a good showing for the 'border statesmen' of Maricopa County."

The voters of District No. 1, having failed to elect Trustees on the first Monday of 1871, according to the act passed during that year, the school superintendent made the following appointments, on June 10th, 1871: William H. Kirkland, James A. Young, and John P. Osborn, who were duly sworn in and assumed the duties of their office, the first in the county to serve in that capacity.

In the following year School District No. 1 elected the following trustees: Captain William A. Hancock, John P. Osborn and J. D. Rumberg, all well-known residents of Phoenix and vicinity. On August 5th, 1872, these gentlemen met at the office of Capt. Hancock and finding their certificates of election correct, organized the school board by the selection of Capt. Hancock as Clerk and Treasurer. At this initial meeting of the trustees, plans for the early construction of a

small schoolhouse were discussed, and before adjourning Clerk Hancock was instructed to "draw up and circulate a subscription paper for the purpose of raising money to build a schoolhouse in the town of Phoenix, on the block donated to the school trustees for school purposes by the Town Association." Maricopa County was the baby subdivision of the Territory at this time, but it was the first to avail itself of the provisions of the new school law, and to its enterprising citizens belongs the honor of putting into operation the first free public school in the Territory under the law of 1871.

In addition to the two public schools in operation at this time, "Gus" Chenowith had a private school in his own house. The two public schools closed for the summer season about the beginning of July, and on the 3rd of that month J. R. Darroche, the first master of the Phoenix school, was, by the Board of Supervisors, appointed County Recorder to succeed J. L. Mercer, who had resigned. After a vacation lasting through the summer months, the fall term opened on October 14th, 1872, under the auspices of J. Parker, the second master of the local school. A Phoenix resident who visited the school on November 22nd, wrote as follows:

"Yesterday afternoon I visited the public school in town, and found it in a flourishing condition under the management of J. Parker. About twenty-six children belong to the school, of whom twenty were in attendance. They showed great proficiency in their studies."

Parker did not serve long as master of the school, which was discontinued on the 14th day

of December, 1872. At that time it was decided by the trustees to employ a female teacher in the future, and with that object in view a correspondence was commenced with Governor Safford, who was, as has been stated, ex-officio Territorial Superintendent of Public Instruction. Female teachers were not readily available at that time, and the Phoenix School was started again on January 13th, 1873, with W. A. Glover in charge.

On March 8th, 1873, a meeting of the voters of District No. 1 was held in the courtroom on South First Avenue, for the purpose of selecting trustees for the ensuing two years, and of discussing plans looking to the erection of the long desired schoolhouse. The trustees elected at this meeting were J. D. Rumberg, of the first board, Benjamin F. Patterson, and George Roberts, two well-known ranchers. Preliminary steps were taken toward starting the work on the proposed schoolhouse, which was deemed a necessity by all of the settlers. Judge Alsap was authorized by the trustees to purchase lumber and other material and attend generally to the details of the construction of the schoolhouse, and on August 25th, 1873, he entered into a contract with John Casey for the erection of the adobe walls of the building. A man named J. L. Hunt put on the shingle roof; Richard Pearson made the windowsashes, the school desks, and did other carpenter work; Thomas Williams did the plastering, while H. Sayers whitewashed the walls. A man by the name of Curtis, H. Franks, J. Goldwater & Bro., Wormser & Wertheimer, and Charles W. Stearns, contributed build-

ing material of one kind or another and during the first winter the school stove was kept burning with wood furnished by Benjamin F. Patterson. Mr. Patterson was one of the school trustees, and had come to the valley in 1868. Not much is known of Glover who was teaching during this time, but he was followed by the first really capable teacher to be placed in control of the Phoenix school, Miss Ellen Shaver. To this pioneer teacher belongs the distinction of being the first woman instructor to be employed in our local schools.

At the time of Miss Shaver's arrival the Phoenix school building was nearing completion. She reached Phoenix in the latter part of October, 1873, coming from the State of Wisconsin, and on November 3d she appeared before the school authorities, passed a very creditable examination, and on the 8th was formally employed and entered upon her duties in the new schoolhouse, on the 10th day of November, 1873. Miss Shaver came to Phoenix highly recommended from her home in the East. On the 21st of November, 1873, the following item appeared in a contemporary newspaper:

"Miss Shaver, the new teacher, is progressing finely. She now has thirty-five scholars, with the prospect of an increase. The new schoolhouse, in which the children are being taught, is an adobe, twenty by thirty feet in the clear, and sixteen feet high, with a good shingle roof. There are three windows on each side, one large double door in one end, and a fireplace in the other. The floor is dirt, but the trustees intend putting in one of plank as soon as they can



procure the lumber. The building, so far, has cost \$1,400, and it will take \$200 more to finish it. Last week Judge Alsap, the county superintendent, purchased a small supply of books for the children and he intends sending into California for a new set in a short time. Several young ladies from the Mesquite are attending school."

In 1871 the children of school age in Maricopa County numbered 103; in 1872, from the county assessor's figures, 313; while in 1873, the school census returns, carefully compiled, showed the number to be 302, 157 boys and 145 girls. Of these children 232 resided within the Phoenix District, and the remaining 70 within the Mesquite District. Of this number, however, but a comparatively small percentage, about twenty per cent, attended the public schools during the year 1873. In 1874 the number of school children in Maricopa County was placed at 323, of which 243 belonged in District No. 1, and 80 in District No. 2. James A. Young took the first county school census in the latter part of 1871; J. R. Darroche in 1873; J. D. Rumberg in 1874; and George E. Freeman in 1876.

In the beginning of the year 1874 the free schools of Arizona were in successful operation. Throughout the same year Miss Shaver continued to teach in the Phoenix school with marked success, and to the entire satisfaction of the school trustees. The Prescott Miner of January 22d, 1875, had the following concerning the Phoenix public schools:

"The public schools of Phoenix opened on Monday morning, January 18th, under the efficient management of Miss Shaver. The chil-

dren have had a long vacation, and it is presumed that they have enjoyed themselves during the holidays. They are no exception to the general average of children, being loth to come down to the business of school hours, books, and birch rods again."

Just when Miss Shaver was proving her sterling worth as a teacher, and her pupils were making the most rapid progress in all their studies, John Y. T. Smith, of Camp McDowell, came upon the scene and induced her to become his wife. Their marriage occurred on October 3d, 1875, at the home of John A. Rush, at Prescott, the ceremony being performed by Rev. A. Gilmore, a chaplain of the United States Army then stationed at Whipple Barracks. When John Marion, owner of the Prescott "Weekly Miner," heard of the marriage of his friend Smith, he made the following allusion to it:

"It comes awkward to say 'Little Smiths,' but had the chaplain changed John's name to that of his bride, instead of hers to Mrs. John Smith, how convenient in wishing them joy, to add, 'and a whole band of little Shavers.' "

Mr. and Mrs. John Y. T. Smith had a son and two daughters as the result of their marriage.

The school trustees had to look around for another teacher, and finally selected Mrs. Alabama Fitzpatrick for the next mistress of the school. Miss Carrie G. Hancock, a sister of Captain Hancock and a resident of Sacramento, California, had also been considered as a possible successor to Miss Shaver, and had come to Phoenix for the purpose of taking charge of

the school. When the choice, however, was made in favor of Mrs. Fitzpatrick, Miss Hancock was given the Hayden's Ferry school at the Tempe Settlement, where she taught from the fall of 1875 to the spring of 1876, after which she taught some time in the schools in Phoenix. When Miss Hancock assumed the role of teacher at the Tempe Settlement (Hayden's Ferry), the trustees were Charles T. Hayden, J. T. Priest and Winchester Miller. Under Mr. Hayden's direction a small adobe building near the center of the little settlement was put in repair, and here Miss Hancock started her school. The little building had a "lean-to" at the back, in which Miss Hancock made her home during the school term. The number of children at the opening of this school was fourteen, of which three were of American and eleven of Mexican parentage.

In the middle seventies Boards of Examiners were organized in the various counties of the Territory for the purpose of determining the fitness of school teachers seeking employment in Arizona. At one of its first meetings, in the month of September, 1875, the Maricopa County Board granted teachers' diplomas to — Hedgepeth, who taught for a time in the Mesquite school, Carrie G. Hancock and Allie Fitzpatrick. Mrs. Fitzpatrick assumed charge of the Phoenix school on October 4th, 1875, and shortly afterwards the following appeared in some correspondence from the Phoenix settlement:

"The public school has been in operation for two weeks under the management of Mrs. Fitz-

patrick, who is said to be a very competent teacher. There are forty-five scholars in attendance."

Up to this time all the teachers who had had charge of the Phoenix school had received a compensation of \$100 per month, but an effort was made when Mrs. Fitzpatrick was appointed to make a noticeable reduction. By a vote of two to one, however, the trustees kept the salary of the teacher at the original figure, thus showing that even at that early date the citizens of Phoenix were strongly in favor of having first-class public schools, and were willing to pay the price.

The "Prescott Miner" of December 17th, 1875, had the following from a Phoenix correspondent:

"On Friday last, November 26th, 1875, the usual monthly examination of the public school in Phoenix, taught by Mrs. Allie Fitzpatrick, took place, at which a number of ladies and gentlemen were present. About forty children, mostly Americans, were in attendance, who exhibited considerable proficiency in the various exercises. Perhaps one of the best features was the singing, which was good. Music should be taught in all schools. Extracts read by several of the young ladies were very appropriate, and a dialogue by Miss Marilla Murray, Miss Flora Murray and Miss Annie Kellogg was excellent. After the children were dismissed, the adults present canvassed the feasibility of a Christmas tree, with suitable presents, for the children of the school, and Mrs. Granville H. Oury, Mrs. John Smith, Mrs. Braniman, Mrs.

M. P. Griffin, Mrs. Columbus H. Gray, Mrs. John Gardiner and Miss Greenhaw were appointed a committee to solicit subscriptions, procure suitable presents, and do all else necessary. The Hon. John Smith promised to procure a suitable tree. Mrs. Braniman, Mrs. Oury and Mrs. Griffin have already collected upwards of \$100. Mrs. Smith is treasurer and at her house the committee is to meet to-morrow evening to consult further in regard to the matter."

Through the efforts of these kindly ladies the school children had their Christmas tree, a rare treat in the sparsely settled Arizona of that day.

Of the scholars mentioned above, Flora Murray became the wife of R. L. Rosson, a physician and afterwards Treasurer of Maricopa county; Annie Kellogg married Newel Herrick, a partner of George H. N. Luhrs, and Marilla Murray is now Mrs. Neri Osborn of Phoenix.

After a vacation extending through the holidays, school was again commenced on January 3rd, 1875, Mrs. Fitzpatrick continuing as teacher throughout the year.

On February 29th, 1876, the trustees authorized Judge Alsap to employ laborers to clear the school block, the brush and refuse to be piled in the adobe hole near the schoolhouse, an unsightly excavation from which had been taken the dirt to make the adobes for the building. Soon after this was done, on March 19th, a contract was given to Benjamin F. Patterson for the planting of cottonwood trees on all sides of the school block. It was about this time that Allie Fitzpatrick decided to marry John Montgomery, then a dashing and energetic young





MISS CARRIE G. HANCOCK.

rancher, and her school career, like that of Ellen Shaver, ended in a happy marriage.

Miss Carrie G. Hancock succeeded Mrs. Fitzpatrick, school opening on the 11th day of September, 1876. An order was issued at this time "that no public meetings, religious, political, or otherwise, shall be held in the schoolhouse of this district after September 11th, 1876."

Miss Hancock continued in charge of the school until March 27th, 1877, soon after which time she returned to California, and for many years was city librarian at Sacramento, but now, having returned to the Salt River Valley in 1916, she makes her home here with her nephews, Harry S. Hancock, and Herbert R. Patrick, of Phoenix.

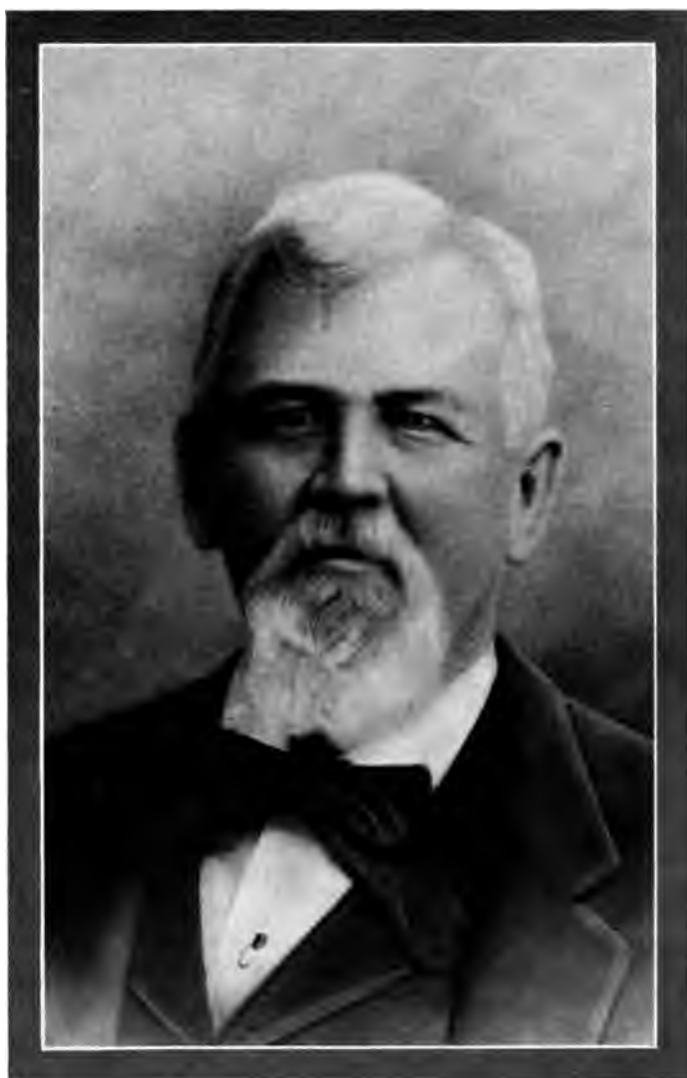


## CHAPTER XII:

## SALT RIVER VALLEY PROGRESS (Continued).

NARRATIVE OF MRS. MARY A. GRAY—FIRST WHITE WOMAN IN VALLEY—DARRELL DUPPA—THOMAS THOMPSON HUNTER BRINGS IN FIRST HERD OF CATTLE—REMINISCENCES—EARLY SETTLERS—DESCRIPTION OF PIMA AND MARICOPA SQUAWS GATHERING WOOD—ALFILERILA FLATS—CATERPILLARS—BIOGRAPHY OF THOMAS THOMPSON HUNTER—MORE EARLY SETTLERS—LATER VISIT—NOTES DOMESTICATION OF INDIANS—EARLY MARRIAGES IN VALLEY—CAPTAIN WILLIAM A. HANCOCK, BIOGRAPHY—HON. JOHN T. ALSAP, BIOGRAPHY—SIMON NOVINGER, BIOGRAPHY.

Columbus H. Gray and Mary A. Gray, his wife, were the first permanent settlers on the north side of the Salt River Valley. C. H. Gray, or "Lum" Gray, as he was known, was a very active citizen during his life. At one time he was a member of the legislature, and he was always, more or less, a miner and prospector. Careless in money matters; a man of strong passions, true to his friends and vindictive to his enemies, naturally he had close friends and bitter enemies. His widow is a typical pioneer woman, and has resided in one place on their ranch just south of Phoenix for nearly fifty years. At the time of his death, Mr. Gray was interested in mining properties about ten miles



COLUMBUS H. GRAY.



west of Ehrenberg, in California. The following interview with Mrs. Gray gives much first hand information in regard to the settlement of Phoenix and the Salt River Valley:

"We came into the valley on the 18th of August, 1868. I was about the first white woman in the valley. The Adams family arrived on their way to California when we came here. Sheriff Jeff Adams was a little boy then. Another family named Rowe came in here. We came and settled. The others were only camping here. They went off, and then some of them came back. I have been a constant resident on this ranch for forty-eight years since the 18th of August, 1868, and am now left alone. I am seventy-one years old.

"I have seen many changes in this valley. Mr. Gray helped take out the canal which was a part of the old Swilling Ditch. When we came in 1868, they had taken out a little water; it ran for two or three miles. They had planted some corn, beans, pumpkins, and anything they could get to plant. That was in 1868, the first crops raised here. It was mostly men in the valley then. There were no families. Swilling's wife was in Tucson. I was the first white woman to settle in the valley and stay here. I remember that when I went to court to give my evidence in the water rights case, I was in a hurry to get away, but the judge called me back and asked me if I was in the same place, and when I said that I was, he said that I was about the only one that was.

"The first church established here was the South Methodist Church. The first minister

that came into this valley to preach was McKean. Groves came next. When Groves came they had no church, and he preached in different places. He preached in our house for one thing; that was when we lived in the old adobe. I think it was about 1870 or 1871—'70 I guess.

"My husband and myself came in 1868 across the plains, the railroad didn't come until 1869. We were on our way to Northern California, where Mr. Gray had mined when a boy. If we had had an idea that the Central railroad would have been through to California in another year, we would have waited until it was completed. In 1878, when I went home over the northern route, the Southern Pacific had got to Yuma; there we met the train from here.

"I don't remember any of the old settlers who remain, if any do. They were kind of loose; there is none of them that stayed any length of time. Irvine was about the first, and the Osborns came in 1869. They kept dropping in.

"We went broke in the dry year of 1891-92. Mr. Gray had over fifty head of stock die, and we couldn't get water enough to irrigate two acres that dry year. We had a wind mill pump and a hand pump in the well. We first got water about twenty-one or twenty-two feet down, but that year we had to keep adding pipe until we got down about forty feet.

"Mr. Gray started to build a building for the Masonic Hall, on Jefferson and First Streets, and then sold it to the Goldwaters. Goldwater afterwards told me that 'Fools build and wise men occupy.' He told me they should have

stayed in Phoenix, and he would have done much better here than he did by going to Prescott.

"Mr. Gray was in the Confederate Army. He got back home from California the year before the war broke out. He had been in California for ten years. He went there when he was sixteen years old with his brother, and then got back just in time to go into the war. He served in the war and was nine months in the prison at Alton, Illinois. He was captured at Helena, Arkansas, and then he escaped by jumping out of the cars as he was being transferred from Alton to Fort Delaware. There were three of them got away by jumping through the windows of the car. He got back home and stayed for three or four weeks, and then went back into the army.

"He was born in Florida in 1833. I was born in Arkansas. My people and his people were real pioneers. My grandparents went to Georgia when they had to stand guard over the fields to keep the Indians off. I was born in the southern portion of Arkansas, in Union County, about twelve miles from the Louisiana line, in 1846. I was seventy years old May last, and never had good health until we came here. We were coming just for a rest, but when we saw the valley we made up our minds to settle here. The valley when we first saw it was lovely. There was grass about a foot high, and it was fine. I never had any trouble with the Indians. We never saw a wild Indian all the way across the plains; never saw an Indian until we got here and saw the Pimas and Maricopas.

"I don't remember just when it was the Mormons came in here at Tempe.

"I don't remember just when the Tempe Canal was started, but the Swilling Ditch was giving us water before the Tempe Canal was commenced.

"I was here when they had the contest over East Phoenix and West Phoenix, and it was settled by the vote of the people. The town started off at this end of the valley, and the settlers were coming in down here. Swilling was fighting for East Phoenix. His place was right over here.

"Jim Murphy, the deputy sheriff, is a son of the Murphy, who was of the firm of Murphy & Dennis, and whose wife was a Mexican woman. The little store he established was a godsend to us, as we had no merchants nearer than Wickenburg on the one side, and Maricopa Wells on the other. When we wanted merchandise, about all the men in the valley would have to go to Wickenburg for it, and maybe they could get a piece of bacon about a foot long, and six inches wide, for the whole settlement. I was one time without shoes, and Mr. Duppa was going over to Maricopa, and I asked him to bring me a pair. He brought me a pair of sixes, and at that time I wore twos. I told him they didn't fit me exactly, and he said that it was all he could get, and a sight better than going bare-footed.

"I don't remember the time Duppa died. I think he was alive in 1887. He was a strange character. I asked him once why he didn't go back to England. His older brother had died, and they sent for him, and he said that he couldn't go back and have to pull his hat off to people; that he would have to open up the old estate and accept all the responsibilities of a







MRS. MARY A. GRAY.

high position over there, and that he did not want to do. Duppa would never become a citizen of the United States though. They sent his younger brother over after him, but he told him: 'John, you can go back and rest satisfied that I will never return.'

"At times he would go off in the mountains and stay until his hair came down to his shoulders, and sometimes when he came back he didn't look like a human. I was home once when he returned from the mountains, and he was as rough a character as you would want to see. He looked like he hadn't washed his face or combed his hair for months. He went to Maricopa and brought me back some Sonora oranges, and he had been shaved and cleaned up, and bought a new suit, and he came to the door and knocked, and when I went to the door, he began by saying: 'Good morning, Ma'am,' thinking I wouldn't know him, but I knew him by his voice. Duppa lived right over there. (Pointing west.)

"Dr. Thibodo and his wife are both dead. Duppa got his remittances through Dr. Thibodo. Thibodo used to come down here sometimes, but toward the last he hardly ever went out of his drugstore.

"I was married in 1865, August 24th, my husband's full name being Columbus H. Gray and mine Mary A. Gray. My maiden name was Mary A. Norris. My brother, Coleman Norris, lives here in town. He is not doing anything now. He has two sons and a daughter. Bud Gray a half brother of my husband is dead. He

was taken sick out at the mine and came in, and died in six weeks.

“My brother Mr. Norris came into the valley about thirty years ago. When I went back home in 1878, I brought my parents back with me. I think he came in within five years after they left. His wife came of a delicate family, and they didn't think she could live two years there, so he brought her here.”

Thomas Thompson Hunter was born in Louisiana February 24th, 1844. He was reared in South Carolina; received an academic education. During the Civil War he served from the beginning to the end in a battery of General Longstreet's corps, and was mustered out at Nachitoches, Louisiana, June 26th, 1865, when he went into Western Texas and embarked in the cattle business. Learning of the natural advantages of Arizona, he drove his herd across the plains, and came into what is now the Salt River Valley and Phoenix with the first herd of cattle. Upon reaching Maricopa, a few pioneers came over from the Salt River and told his party about that wonderful country where there was plenty of grass and a fine place to recruit their cattle. They changed their plans and on the first of January, 1868, entered the Salt River Valley, and pitched their camp just west of Hayden Butte. Both the Gila and Salt Rivers were at high tide, and after crossing the Gila they lived on beef straight until the waters of the Salt subsided, when they crossed on the 16th of February, 1868, and found a few pioneers on the north side of the Salt River taking out the first canal from that river, known afterwards as the

Swilling Canal. Mr. Hunter says: "The business men of the Territory were assisting the enterprise, and the Government policy at that time was to aid all infant settlements, and Fort McDowell, being thirty-five miles from us on the Verde River, helped the little settlement a great deal.

"Jack Swilling was the first settler on the canal; old man Freeman came next, then McWhorter next, whose settlement was abandoned not long afterwards. Coming back from a business trip to Fort McDowell, the Indians murdered poor old McWhorter, as he was called. Then came Pump Handle John, and next to him was Lord Duppa and Vandermark, then myself, Hunter, and McVey, then the Irish boys, Jim Lee, Fitzgerald and Tom Conley, the Starar brothers, Jake and Andy, next, then old man Adams and family, then one-eyed Davis and Bill Bloom. Frenchy Sawyer was located somewhere near the Irish boys, and built the first house erected in the valley, which consisted of four cottonwood forks set in the ground and covered with mud, making a nice retreat on a hot day. While sojourning in Pima and Maricopa counties, I witnessed several incidents which are hard for me to forget. One that impressed me so much I will relate. We turned our poor cattle loose to hunt forage. They were compelled to range out ten to fifteen miles. It was my custom to cut sign every morning, go outside of all cattle tracks among the sand hills. Occasionally the squaws would band together and go away out to procure mesquite wood. The first time I witnessed this sight I was out some ten or twelve

miles. From the top of a sand hill, looking back toward the river, I saw the strange sight. I saw two hundred and fifty Indian women in a long line with their three-cornered baskets and long slick-sticks, that at first resembled a herd of cattle, their sticks looking like horns. The wood being reached, they began filling their baskets, and when filled they each had a good burro load. It was a sight to see them when loaded start back with their heavy burdens in a little trot peculiar to themselves. I noticed, too, what struck me so forcibly, a picket line being maintained along the crest of sand hills by the Pima warriors. They were armed with bows and arrows, and each sentinel stood with his bow slung ready to fire on the first sight of an enemy. Thus was the frontier being maintained by these naked, poverty-stricken, ignorant savages, the price of peace, self-preservation, the first law of nature, even among these savages. Just a little negligence on the part of this frontier army, and the Apache might rush upon their women and take them off to captivity and slavery. From the bottom of my heart I pitied these poor, helpless, starved people, fighting their battle of life, and making their struggle for existence in their own peculiar way. We call them savages for one thing, that they make beasts of burden out of their women, and we were taught in our childhood days that no Christian nation ever did that. The first sign of civilization was to place our women on a level with the men. While we condemn the Pima and Maricopa Indian slavery, we find the flower of the highest civilization on earth stationed upon the frontier in order to

maintain the peace, while their women are in the same condition that we find the savage Indian women forty years ago.

“While we held our cattle on the Salt River plains, I was the herder. On Churchill’s Addition to the city of Phoenix was a low, heavy soil that I designated as the Alfileria flats. Several hundred acres were well set with alfileria, and being the first of its kind that either the cattle or myself had ever seen, the cattle took kindly to the new forage, and soon were as fat as butter. I would always turn the cattle loose about daylight. They would go no farther than the Alfileria flats. There they would eat their fill and lay down, and about the noon hour I would start them back to the river for water. The alfileria had begun to mature, and it seemed to me that in one night every bunch of it was covered with a large variegated colored caterpillar, and, as a consequence, the cattle would not touch it that morning, and lit out to hunt pastures new. I mounted my pony and started after them, and I had to ride hard to turn them back, as they, in a little while more, would be in the Apache country. I drove them back, and it was probably the middle of the afternoon before I got them to the Alfileria flats. In examining the weed, I found out for the first time what the trouble was,—it was the worm. Then I saw a funny sight. A long line of Indians of all kinds were coming across the flats. On my approaching near enough I discovered that they were gathering these worms and eating them raw, happy and innocent as children in a huckleberry patch. After getting their stomachs filled, the maidens

of the tribe strung the worms through the middle with a needle and thread. They would then double the strands several times, and place the strands over their necks, and the live worms would wiggle upon their naked busts. The sun shining upon the variegated collars made them appear to be a beautiful necklace. Of course it was beautiful until we discovered that it was really live, repulsive worms." (The Indians boiled these caterpillars with a little salt, and then ate them.)

The mesquite grove of which Mr. Hunter speaks was probably the grove which covered what is known as the "Balch Addition to Phoenix." It was covered with mesquite in 1887 when the writer settled in this valley.

Some time in the spring of 1868 a little girl was born to John Adams and wife, who it is claimed was the first white child born in Phoenix. She is now married and the mother of a large family.

Mr. Hunter was married in Yavapai County in 1868, to Miss Ollie T. Gallaspy, which was among the first marriages solemnized in that county. Four children were born to this union. In 1884 he served in the Territorial Legislature, and after that time was, for several years, justice of the peace at Safford, where he died about the year 1912. Speaking of early arrivals in the Salt River Valley, Mr. Hunter says:

"Up to August, 1868, there were a number of new people who came into the valley. Among the lot were Lum Gray and family, Greenhaw, Patterson, and the Rowe Family, and an old fel-

low known as Red Wilson, who formed a company with old man John Adams, and others, to take out what was known as the Wilson Canal. It came out of the river below the Swilling Canal. Old Red Wilson made life miserable for me. Every time I met him he was telling me the future of the Salt River—that I was young and that I would live to see a city built there, etc. I could not see it like he did, but just twenty-eight years afterwards I visited the valley again, and realized that old Red Wilson had proven himself a correct prophet. Phoenix had risen from the ashes, from nothing as it were—it was on the occasion of her first midwinter carnival. She was decorated and presented one of the most beautiful appearances that I ever witnessed. I felt indeed that I was another Rip Van Winkle. Twenty-eight years ago here were the same Pima and Maricopa Indians in evidence plentifully. These Indians were from the Government schools at Phoenix. What a change in so short a time. They were forming on the Churchill Addition by platoon to take part in the parade through the city, my old Alfileria Flat in the long ago. Twenty-eight years before their fathers and mothers were eating raw caterpillars on the very same spot where their children were forming for parade, with Indian youths leading the procession with a brass band of their own, followed by a little boy corps of drummers. The maidens who had the caterpillar necklaces then, were dressed in uniform, marching by platoon like the regulars of the army. Everything had changed except the grand old brown mountains—they looked just the same, together



and his wife were my personal friends—good people they were, true pioneers, true friends, ever ready to respond to the needs of their fellows. They would divide their last crust with the needy prospectors who chanced their way. If still alive they are very old. I presume, however, that they have both passed to their reward in the great beyond.”

Mr. John F. Crampton gives the following concerning the marriage of one of his two sisters: “Mrs. Fitzgerald, my sister, was married in 1873. Her husband was postmaster and had a store at Yuma, and came to Maricopa Wells to marry her, where my sister, with the rest of the family, were living at the time. Dr. Alsap was Probate Judge in Phoenix. They sent for him to perform the ceremony, and when he got to Maricopa Wells he found out that he was out of his jurisdiction, being in Pinal County, and, consequently, could not perform the marriage. The girls took on a good deal, and when I got there, having just ridden on horseback from Tucson, I asked them what was the matter. They told me that everything was ready for the wedding and that Dr. Alsap was there, but that he was out of his jurisdiction and could not perform the ceremony. My sister said: ‘Henry is up here from Yuma, and Dr. Alsap is here from Phoenix, and we are in another county and cannot get married.’ I thought a minute, and then said: ‘That’s easy. The line is only six or seven miles from here. We’ll all get in the coach and drive across the line.’ I went to the corral and hitched up six horses to the stage coach, and we all piled in and on, twenty-seven

of us, and drove out across the line into Maricopa County. We got there about eleven o'clock at night, and with some holding candles, and standing around in a circle, Judge Alsap performed the ceremony, and we drove back to Maricopa Wells. They were married under an ironwood tree."

The day after the wedding Mr. Crampton drove a six-horse Concord stage coach to Yuma with the bride and groom and members of the wedding party. They probably had a good time both at Maricopa Wells and at Yuma, for marriages at that time were few and far between, and congratulations on the part of the boys to the lucky bridegroom were extended with great cordiality, interspersed with champagne, and the et ceteras.

Mr. Crampton says further:

"I went out to see the place about three years ago, and the old tree is still there. My niece says that if she can do it, she is coming to Arizona to take up that tree, and plant it in her mother's yard, and then her mother will have her hobby there."

Mr. and Mrs. Fitzgerald remained in Yuma until 1879, when they settled in San Francisco, where Mr. Fitzgerald died, and there his widow still survives him.

This is the first record that I know of anywhere, where pioneers had to drive six or seven miles and then be married at midnight under an ironwood tree.

Among the early pioneers in the Salt River Valley, aside from J. W. Swilling, two men stand out most prominently in the history of

Phoenix, William A. Hancock, who was born on the 17th day of May, 1831, in Barry, Massachusetts, and died in Phoenix in the year 1901, and John T. Alsap, who was born in Frankfort, Kentucky, February 28th, 1830, and died in Phoenix on the 10th day of September, 1886.

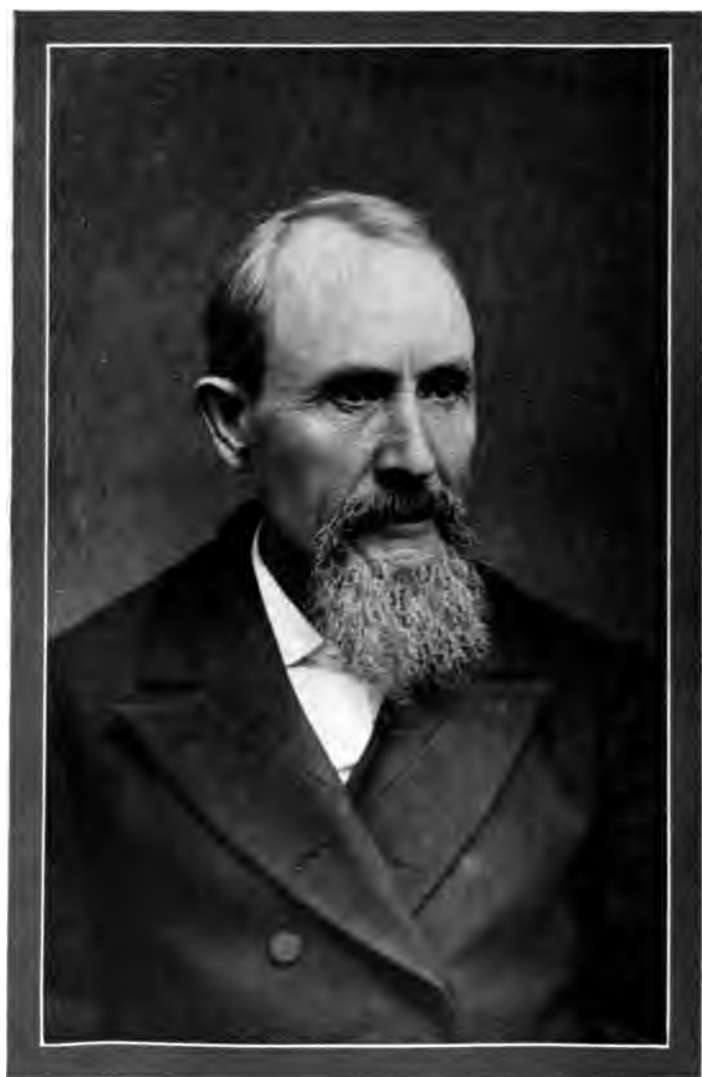
Captain Hancock was educated in the public schools in Massachusetts and in Leicester Academy, and, in the spring of 1853, with his brothers, John and Henry, made the trip across the plains and deserts to California, where they located upon a ranch. In 1864 Captain Hancock enlisted in the California Volunteers and in the following year was sent to Fort Yuma, and was there mustered into Company "C" of the First Arizona Volunteers, with the rank of Second Lieutenant. He was stationed at Fort McDowell, and promoted to the rank of First Lieutenant, and was mustered out of the service in September, 1866. He then became superintendent of the Government Farm at Fort McDowell, and then post trader at Camp Reno, which latter position he held until he came to the Phoenix Settlement in 1870. As has been stated Captain Hancock surveyed the city of Phoenix, and held many offices of honor and trust, having been the first postmaster of Phoenix, District Attorney, Probate Judge, and the first sheriff of Maricopa County, having been appointed to that position by Governor Safford. He also served as Assistant Attorney of the United States for the District of Arizona, and was, for some time, County Superintendent of Schools. He was always an earnest friend of irrigation projects, and was one of the committee of three appointed to in-



CAPT. WILLIAM A. HANCOCK.







JOHN T. ALSAP.

investigate the Colorado River project. In politics a Republican, he loyally aided in the establishment of the party in Maricopa County, and served, at one time, as a member of the County Central Committee. He was one of the members of the Pioneers Association of Arizona, of the Territorial Bar Association, of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, and of Capt. Owen Post, G. A. R., at one time being senior vice-commander of the Post. He was married in 1873 to Lillie B. Kellogg, and leaves two children, a son, Henry L. Hancock, and a daughter, Mrs. Mabel Latham. Captain Hancock was associated, in his lifetime, with most of the enterprises in Phoenix and the Salt River Valley, and his reputation was always that of an enterprising, energetic citizen, whose integrity was never questioned.

John T. Alsap, as before noted, was the first Territorial Treasurer. It was through his influence as a member of the Sixth Legislature of the Territory that the county of Maricopa was created. As a lawyer, Judge, town commissioner, and, in fact, in every capacity in which he acted, he proved himself a citizen of rare enterprise, merit and worth.

One of the honored pioneers and esteemed citizens of Phoenix, was Simon Novinger, who was born in Halifax, Dauphin County, Pennsylvania, January 14th, 1832, a son of Isaac and Hannah (Hawk) Novinger, both natives of Lykens Valley, that county.

Mr. Novinger was reared in much the usual manner of farmer boys of his day, attending school about four months, and devoting the re-



mainder of the year to the labors of the field. After attaining his majority he worked two years at the stone mason trade, and then again engaged in farming. He spent considerable time in travelling over the east, and in 1863, started for Nevada. From St. Joseph, Mo., he started across the plains with ox teams, but learning of the gold excitement at Virginia City, Montana, he decided to go to that place. He went up the North Platte to Red Butte, and then took the trail north, afterward known as the Bozeman Route. There were 417 men in the company with which he travelled, and they had with them 127 wagons. They were twice attacked by Indians, but finally reached their destination in safety. On his arrival in Virginia City, Mr. Novinger engaged in building for a time, and then turned his attention to placer mining, in which he was quite successful. He spent five years in Montana, Nevada, Idaho, Oregon and British Columbia, and in 1868 went to Stockton, California, where he engaged in farming for a time, later following the same pursuit at Visalia, that State.

In 1871, Mr. Novinger came to the Salt River Valley, at which time Phoenix contained but two buildings. He engaged in prospecting at Four Peaks. On one of his expeditions he was accompanied by two other men. Leaving him at camp the two others started out to look for water, and while they were gone he was attacked by six Indians, whom he put to flight, although they succeeded in wounding him in the right leg. He was taken to Fort McDowell, where on account of his injuries he remained for one hun-





SIMON NOVINGER.

dred and forty days. He then returned to Phoenix, and in 1873 bought a claim and filed on it, consisting of the southeast quarter of section 12, township 2, Maricopa County, a mile and a half from the city. As the years passed the growth of the city touched the boundaries of Mr. Novinger's ranch. In 1877 he bought another tract of one hundred and sixty acres adjoining it on the north, and in the later 80's sold it to General Collins and General Sherman, who laid out on it the "Capitol Addition to Phoenix," which has been quite rapidly built up. Mr. Novinger operated his ranch successfully, raising grain and hay.

In politics Mr. Novinger was a staunch Democrat, and served as a member of the county committee. He made frequent trips East and travelled extensively in both the north and the west. He died January 24th, 1904, in Phoenix.

The portrait of Mr. Novinger which accompanies this sketch was taken with his little grandniece, Mabel Clara Novinger, daughter of Mason D. and Eva Hampton Novinger.

## CHAPTER XIII.

## MORE SETTLEMENTS.

IMMIGRATION IMPEDED BY INDIAN TROUBLES AND OTHER DIFFICULTIES—C. E. COOLEY, A. F. BANTA AND HENRY W. DODD HUNT LOST MINE—BIOGRAPHY OF C. E. COOLEY—BIOGRAPHY OF HENRY W. DODD—TOWN OF ST. JOHNS LOCATED—BIOGRAPHY OF SOL. BARTH—LOCATION IN ROUND VALLEY BY WILLIAM R. MILLIGAN—STARTING OF SPRINGVILLE—LOCATION AND NAMING OF SHOW LOW—FIRST LOCATION OF HOLBROOK—LOCATION ON SILVER CREEK, NOW SNOWFLAKE—BIOGRAPHY OF JAMES STINSON—BIOGRAPHY OF DANIEL H. MING—INTERVIEW WITH J. LORENZO HUBBELL—FIGHTS WITH OUTLAWS AND RUSTLERS—REMINISCENCES BY PROF. E. C. BUNCH—BRINGING IN OF FIRST SAW LOG—ADVENT OF MORMONS—GROWTH OF CATTLE INDUSTRY—"BRIEFS"—OUTLAWS.

Until after the subjugation of the Indians by General Crook, little progress was made in the settled portions around Prescott and other places. During 1870 and 1871, some settlements were started in what is now Maricopa County. The northeastern part of the Territory had been crossed and explored several times, but it was still practically a wilderness. There were no mines found to create an interest in this section. The land was not of a superior quality, and except in a few localities water was scarce, and some of it was of a very bad quality, especially

that of the little Colorado River, so this section, taking it all together, attracted neither the pleasure seeker nor those who were looking for homes. Indian troubles and other difficulties impeded immigration, which came in but slowly. A few, however, were penetrating the unoccupied places in the northwest, making feeble efforts to establish homes, while a few were looking for mines.

On July 12th, 1869, C. E. Cooley, A. F. Banta, and Henry W. Dodd, left the Zuni Villages with a small party of Indians to hunt a gold mine known as the "Doc Thorn Story." Cooley was born in Virginia on the 2nd day of April, 1836. In 1856 he came West, landing at Santa Fe, New Mexico. In 1858 he went to Colorado, and clerked in the first store opened in that State. In 1869 he came to Arizona on a mining expedition, and soon after he settled at Apache, where he married an Apache woman. He was prominent as a scout, and served under General Crook with marked distinction. He first settled at Show Low, but later moved to a place inside the reservation, twenty-two miles north of Apache, where he died in 1917.

Henry W. Dodd was born in Ohio February 7th, 1839. He served in the Civil War from the year 1861 to 1864, came to Arizona in 1869, and later served as guide and scout for the Government. In 1886 he was thrown from a horse, and died soon after.

A. F. Banta is still living, and his biography will be found in a succeeding volume.

In the year 1870 a man by the name of John Walker, who was employed to carry the express between Forts Wingate and Apache (the latter

post having just been occupied by troops), built a cabin at the crossing of the Little Colorado about five miles below where St. Johns is now located. The following year a few Mexicans gathered around this place, and built some temporary huts, and in the spring of 1872 they located the town of St. Johns. Solomon Barth and a few others came in shortly before the town was started. For several years it made but little progress, and like most of these frontier places, had its proportion of renegades, both American and Mexican.

Solomon Barth was a native of Prussia, born in 1842. In 1855 he came to America and drifted from the Eastern States to California. In 1860 he came to La Paz on the Colorado River, and from there went to Weaverville, and in 1863 he was at Granite Creek. He engaged in mail contracts and merchandising, the latter business being carried on in New Mexico, and, in 1873, he moved to St. Johns, where he conducted his business very successfully. He is still living in St. Johns.

In the Fall of 1870 William R. Milligan left Fort Craig with a trainload of corn for the military post which had been established at Apache. His wagons were drawn by oxen. His route was by the Tularosa, New Mexico, and Round Valley, Arizona, to Fort Apache. After delivering his corn he returned, stopping at Round Valley where he put up a log house. This was the first improvement made in the valley. He did this to hold his claim on the place, and this was the first train of wagons to pass through this part of the country. In the fall of 1871 he made

another trip with corn. This time he had fifteen wagons, and among others who were with him was Marion Clark. Owing to the lateness of the season and other causes, a part of the corn was left at the house that had been built the year before. They expected to return soon for it; this was in January. On returning Milligan brought in a complete outfit for farming. He brought with him Anthony Long and Joe McCullough as partners in the enterprise. Some corn and a little barley were put in, the plowing being commenced about the fifteenth of April. Marion Clark planted some on what was later the Julius Becker farm. This may be said to be the starting of the town now known as Springerville.

During the spring Milligan and Clark made a trip on horseback to Camp Verde to see about disposing of the corn which Milligan had left, and to put in bids on hay and wood contracts for Fort Apache. In June the corn was sent over to Camp Verde. The price they received for it was not made public. At Apache Milligan received ten dollars a hundred for Indian colored corn, and twelve and a half dollars for American.

The winter of 1871-72 was a remarkably mild one, it being more like summer than winter. There was no snow or rain in the valley until about the first of April, when there was a slight fall of snow which only lay on the ground for two or three days. The following summer was exceedingly dry. In July the river in the valley dried up so that the fish died in places. There was no rain until about the middle of



August, when the first rain came, and this turned off with a freeze that killed the corn which was just in roasting ears. A small patch of barley, however, that Milligan had put in did well. The loss of the corn crop had a discouraging effect on some. Clark abandoned the enterprise, and McCullough drew out from his partnership with Milligan, and took Clark's place. "Tony" Long drew out and went to Fort Apache to work.

The starting of this place was unlike most other places in Arizona. The hostile Indians never moistened its soil with the blood of its inhabitants. The murderous Apache allowed the settlers to prosecute their labors in comparative peace. The White Mountain Apaches were never as hostile as those in the south and west. It is stated that the first year in the valley the settlers saw bear, deer, antelope, and turkeys almost daily, and that mountain sheep were found in the mountains. Milligan made a permanent location here, and others coming in, some from St. Johns, made the place stronger, so it soon became the center for this region. In the early days of the place all supplies were obtained from Socorro, New Mexico.

C. E. Cooley left his companions on the Salt River, in 1869, where he had, as before stated, gone on one of his mining expeditions, an account of which will be given later. He drifted back to the newly established post, Fort Apache. Here, as before stated, he married an Apache woman (in fact, he married two sisters), and took up a place on White River, some eight miles above the post. In 1872 when the corn was killed by early frosts in Round Valley (the

Milligan place), Marion Clark came over and worked for Cooley a short time. He then went over to Show Low, where he decided to take up a place. There he had some negotiations with one Suvian, a Mexican, about going into partnership with him in locating the place. He went over the ground carefully and located a water ditch. The Indians told him that he was "loco," (crazy), in thinking of settling there for the creek went dry at that point in summer. About this time Cooley and Dodd came through with a party of scouts and Indians looking out a road from Fort Apache to Camp Verde. Coming to this place Cooley remarked: "This is my ranch." Dodd said, "No, it is mine," so to decide the matter they played a game of "seven up" to see who should own the ranch. Cooley played "high" which placed him within a point of going out, when Dodd said, "Show low and go out." Cooley showed the three spot, which proved to be low. This gave him the game and he jumped up and said he would call the place "Show Low," which name it bears to this day.

Cooley was soon informed that Clark had made a claim on the place. He went to Clark and persuaded him to drop Suvian, whom he was thinking of taking as a partner, and take him instead, which Clark did. Clark and Cooley took out the water, and made some improvements, when Clark drew out, leaving the place to Cooley. Cooley immediately commenced to make improvements upon a much larger scale.

In the year 1871 or 1872, an Indian Chief, with a small band of Indians, located at the confluence of the Show Low and Silver Creeks. Here they

raised a little corn, but the chief dying soon after, the Indians abandoned the place, which was shortly afterwards taken up by Richard J. Bailey.

In 1870 Luther Martin made a location in the little valley just below Woodruff. He soon abandoned this place and went to St. Johns. About this time a man by the name of Berrando made a location where the town of Holbrook now stands. He built a little house and kept a kind of a trading post. Berrando had some means. He was a member of the Peeples' Party that discovered gold at Rich Hill. Later, Henry Hunning succeeded in getting Berrando's wife, and it was reported that he also secured a large share of Berrando's property.

Early in 1873 James Stinson and his partner, Evans, located a place on Silver Creek. Dan Ming was connected with them in this enterprise. Evans had made some money by furnishing the Government with beef for the troops. He did not remain here long, he and Ming drawing out and leaving the place to Stinson. Stinson was a native of Maine. He came to Arizona in 1863, and, with others, located on Silver Creek, now Snowflake. He afterwards sold out to W. J. Flake, and moved to the Salt River Valley. Later on he left the Territory. His wife was Melissa Bagley.

Daniel H. Ming was a native of Kentucky, born in that State in 1845. He came to Arizona in 1869, piloting a herd of cattle across New Mexico to the Little Colorado River. He acted as a Government scout for some time, and during 1875 assisted in bringing in the different





J. LORENZO HUBBELL.

bands of Apaches to the San Carlos reservation. Later he resided at Fort Thomas, where he was interested largely in cattle raising. He represented Graham County twice in the Territorial Legislature. He died a few years ago.

The following interviews with early settlers in this portion of the country show the dangers and difficulties of life in this part of the Territory in those days:

J. LORENZO HUBBELL.—“Was born in Pajarrito, New Mexico, November 21st or 27th, 1853, and came to Arizona in 1871, settling at Fort Defiance on the Navajo Reservation where I established a trading store in partnership with a man by the name of Read.

“At the time I came into the country it was controlled by a lot of outlaws who would rob a man on the highway, and would enter the stores and take what they wanted. They finally killed a German on the main line to Prescott, and that started the mischief. Bill Cavanaugh was the murderer. He also went by the name of Snyder. He had a race horse and was an all round sport. At one time I ran a race with him at Fort Wingate. At that time I was an all round athlete, a foot racer, a wrestler, a fighter, and anything that came along.

“When I came to St. Johns I asked the storekeepers why they allowed the thieves to rob them. I sent for guns and ammunition, and the fight started in St. Johns, and the first week seventeen of them were killed, and eight of our boys. J. G. H. Colter was one of us. It was a rough fight, and lasted a long time. It would die out and

then start up again. Then the Clantons came in and we had trouble with them. When we ran them out, they came in here. One of them, Humphreys, married a relation of mine. He was captured but let go on account of being my relative by marriage. There was quite a fuss stirred up about this matter; about our taking the law into our own hands, and they sent for the troops from Fort Apache to come and capture and arrest us. Captain Carter, I think, was the name of the officer in command. I stood up to him, and told him that we would not be arrested; that we were in the right, and I was prepared to look him in the eye and resist arrest. He said we were perfectly right, and he didn't arrest us. I was in St. Johns when they arrested Colter, Milligan, and some others in Springerville, and killed some of them when they had them under arrest. I didn't do any of the killing myself, but I supplied the guns and ammunition for the fighting, was, in fact, the man behind the guns. That kept on until I was elected sheriff in 1885. It would die down and then come up again.

"Finally the sheep and cattle men took up these outlaws. Colter and Milligan were cattle men, but were on our side. It was a fight between the cattlemen and the sheepmen and the rustlers, but finally some of the cattlemen took up with the rustlers. We had it all settled, we thought, and were getting on peaceably, when Huhning, Tee and Smith, three of them who were elected to office by my efforts, turned around and wanted to put me out of office. They tried to put me out on account, as they put it, of absence from the Territory. I

was on my ranch inside of the reservation, and they tried to make out that this was absence from the Territory; that was their excuse. Rudd was County Judge. I refused to go out, and held the office. I was the strongest. I had the position and held it. Then it was decided in my favor. Then we compromised and there has been peace ever since. That war lasted years. It would flare up at times like fire. The first war was ended in two weeks. These outlaws came in from Colorado and Texas. Cavanaugh, who went by the name of Snyder, was one of their leaders. They killed Colonel Hunt, and wherever they went they left a trail of blood. In this first fight, as before stated, there were seventeen of them killed. It stayed quiet for a year, and then it flared up again. One of them was arrested here for the killing of Spencer. On the first trial he came within one of being acquitted, and then on the next trial he was acquitted. They were all outlaws, and we had to get rid of them.

"When Cleveland was first elected President, I was elected to the Territorial Senate, and was also elected to the first State Senate. I have held several public positions and my experiences in Arizona have been long and varied.

"I knew Victorio and Geronimo personally; knew them very well. I knew Victorio particularly well when he came through Fort Wingate. We got them both there in the fort, but they had not broken out on the warpath then; they broke out afterwards and killed a great many people. They came to Lasa Ward and killed every one there and took one woman. She took hold



of one of the Indians and wouldn't let go. They killed everyone else. They just made a rapid march through there. They first came in there, I think, in 1871 or 1872, and, I think, made the raid in 1879. They wanted to stay at their home at Ojos Caliente, Tularosa, New Mexico. They wanted to stay there; they belonged to the Mangus Colorado tribe, the Warm Springs Indians. I knew Cochise and Pedro, knew them well. They captured Sol Barth and several others, Chavez, Calderon and others, and took them out and turned them loose, all naked, and the only thing they had to eat was a dog they found. They had to walk seventy-five miles to the nearest settlement, and had no guns or ammunition."

Mr. Hubbell, at this writing, is still living.

The following is given me by Prof. E. C. Bunch, Principal of the Benson Schools:

"In giving you a few reminiscences of my early days in Arizona, I write from memory, which may cause some inaccuracy in dates.

"On August 1st, 1876, in company with several families of immigrants from northwest Arkansas, I crossed the line from New Mexico into Arizona, about fifteen miles east of St. Johns. Our company attracted considerable attention as it was the first company of immigrants to come into the Little Colorado country with their families, livestock and household belongings, with the avowed purpose of making homes and staying in Arizona. We were told that the farming land was about all taken up, but the cat-

tlemen were directed to unlimited fields for grazing, which was the main thing they desired.

"The irrigated land was distributed about as follows: Sol Barth and brothers, Morris and Nathan, claimed all the water of the Little Colorado below Round Valley, where the first settlement was made in 1870 by W. R. Milligan, Joe McCullough, Dionicio Baca, Anthony Long, and followed within the next three years by Humphrey Holden Jordan, together with many Mexican families who did the work on the canals, raised grain and looked after the stock.

"Silver Creek was held by James Stinson, while C. E. Cooley held undisputed control of Show Low.

"Colter and Murray, who had arrived the year previous to our coming, had taken all of Nutrioso that Mr. Jones, the first settler, would admit he did not own.

"On the Little Colorado, Milligan and Sol Barth were the leading characters of that day, each being a man of means and resourceful, having large freight outfits which were constantly on the roads. Barth's teams, some thirty wagons, three yoke of oxen to each wagon, hauled freight from Trinidad, Colorado, to the various military posts throughout Arizona and New Mexico. After 1873 Milligan's teams were employed in farm work and hauling his grain to Fort Apache, where he had extensive contracts.

"As Round Valley seemed to be the most progressive settlement, and Mr. Milligan needed all the men he could find to aid him in carrying on his extensive works (having at that time both a sawmill and a grist mill under construction),

our party decided to make Round Valley the stopping place. Thus ended a journey overland with wagons and teams, both horses and oxen, besides a couple of thousand head of cattle intended for the range, from Carroll County, Arkansas. We were five months on the road.

"We received a hearty welcome from the settlers in Round Valley. The families divided house room, aid was given to erect new houses for the new people, and we were under shelter within a week, and all the young men at work. Milligan, as I have stated, was a resourceful man. He had, at this time, a contract to deliver 800,000 pounds of barley at Fort Apache, at the modest price of  $5\frac{1}{4}$  cents per pound. As he expected to raise all this grain, together with wheat to meet his needs for flour, you can see his farming was on no small scale. He and Anthony Long had contracts for erecting several houses for the Indians of the White Mountain Apache band. Each house was about 14x18 feet, built of logs and roofed with dirt. The contract price was \$1,600 for each building, and I was told by men on the work that it often took 'Tony' Long and six Mexicans a whole day to build one of these houses, so as to get the Indian Agent to receive it.

"The power for the grist and sawmills was furnished by an overshot wheel which was erected first at the point where his irrigating ditch emptied its water back into the river. He used this power to thresh his grain after the harvest of 1876. I was then put in charge of the teams and sent to mill at Albuquerque. We took five wagons, three yoke of oxen to each wagon,

and depending entirely upon the grass for feed for our oxen, made the round trip in twenty-six days, bringing back, besides flour, enough groceries to stock an ordinary store.

"The one event I can never forget was the bringing in the first sawlog. It was on Sunday morning, early in October. All the men were asked to lend a hand. Two log wagons and teamsters, and all the Mexicans that could get on to the wagons, Mr. Milligan, Master Mechanic McCurren, the head sawyer N. B. George, myself, and a number of interested neighbors, went into the canyon for logs. I am sure there were men enough to have lifted the logs onto the wagons, but we could not all get hold at once. After all manner of suggestions and trials, we finally succeeded in getting one log on each wagon, where it was securely chained and conveyed to the mill, and during the week cut up into boards. Later the grist mill was completed, and although it would not answer the demands now, it furnished flour to the settlers and from that time to the present, the valley has known the advantages of a grist mill.

"I think a tribute should be paid to many of the men who moved on at the first approach of civilization. There was old man Humphrey, who could do artistic as well as much plain swearing. Old man Stephens, who was an expert with a broad axe, hewing logs in competition with the sawmill; Jordan, Benton, Walker and others whose names have passed from my mind. These men were not angels, and I never dug deep into their past histories, nor inquired the names they bore before coming to Arizona, but they had big

hearts and many good traits. Others, like Milligan, Baca, Long, Creagh, Colter, Murray, Franklin, Ruiz, Becker, Rudd and Martin, remained in Arizona, and became leading citizens.

"Harry Springer was the pioneer merchant, for whom Springerville was named, though in 1875 Julius Becker opened a small store which grew into the big store of 'Becker Brothers,' and later, into the 'Becker Commercial Company.' Gustave Becker is the man who built up this great establishment, which has extensive interests in both Arizona and New Mexico.

"When I came to Arizona, Banta was here writing up the doings of men, not even sparing the military officers, whose works were, sometimes, 'not in good form.' He is still here, 'kicking' against the trend of society, though he still believes there are greater evils abroad in the land than the 'Tango Dance,' 'Split Skirts,' or even the boys playing baseball on Sunday.

"In 1878 Sol Barth sold the water of the Little Colorado River to the Mormon people under the leadership of Amon Tenney and David K. Udall, and the real agricultural development began in the Little Colorado Country.

"In the early eighties Springerville became the center of the cattle industry, and soon acquired a name abroad as a *real* 'wild and woolly' town of Arizona, where everything went 'from the hip.' While these days were less exciting than those of the seventies, newspapers carried greatly exaggerated stories to the outside world, and men became famous as 'bad men,' who were known locally as petty rustlers. The same result is seen in the case of the Indians;

Geronimo has become the hero of Apache history, because the newspapers were here to give exciting stories of his exploits, while Cochise, Nana, Victorio and Hoo (Juh), are seldom mentioned. To me, or to any of the people scattered along the San Francisco river from Alpine to Clifton, he looks like a kid compared with Victorio, who killed more people from 1879 up to the date of his death than were killed altogether after his death in all the raids. Military history gives no account of the all-day fight at Alma, just over the line in New Mexico, when several prominent men, and dozens of poor Mexican families were butchered. Among the prominent men killed that morning, before the people could get into the fort, was Mr. Cooney, Superintendent of the mines. His body was placed in a tomb, blasted in the large rock which the Indians used to hide themselves while lying in ambush. I suppose it is still there as it was skillfully sealed with cement and stones. Only one man was killed inside the stockade, though a constant fire was kept up all day. Mr. Murray was shot in the arm after dark, having run into a few Indians who had crawled up near the stockade to carry away their dead. Next morning no dead Indians were found, but it is well known that they lost several. As to which side was winner in these encounters with the pioneer settlers, it is only necessary to compare the warriors led by Victorio, estimated at from six hundred to a thousand, to the handful surrendered with Geronimo. Of the many who were killed by the Apaches, I can recall but few names, though they

were well known at the time. Of those whose loss I keenly felt, owing to close associations, were Paddy Creagh, deputy sheriff, and James Richmond, who were killed on Eagle Creek while returning from Clifton and the Gila Valley where they had been to assess the property which then belonged in Apache County. Another was Robert Benton, an old pioneer of California, Nevada and Arizona. During Indian uprisings he would come into town and make my cabin his home. It always gave me a feeling of security to have the old man around as I had learned much of his prowess and coolness in times of danger. It seems a strange fate that he, who had spent much time and a long life on the frontier, and fought Indians in the whole Rocky mountain region, should be killed in the very last raid of the last tribe to be subdued. Seven dead horses lying around him, many empty shells from his Winchester, and a body left unmutilated, is sufficient proof to me that the old man fought a good fight, and contributed in the fullest measure his share toward making Arizona a fit place for our children to live. Many of these pioneers who were married had Mexican wives, and a great majority of the families were Mexicans.

"To this day I have a kind, sympathetic feeling for the Mexican people, at whose hands I have seen so many deeds of mercy, such kind hospitality extended to every one in need who came amongst them. One well-known Mexican said: 'I have no concern who eats at my table, just so every one is fed.' Berrando's sign at Horse Head Crossing (now Holbrook), painted

by an American and intended to discourage free meals, read as follows: 'If you have the money, you can eat.' Seeing the misery its enforcement caused, however, and the gloom thrown over the light hearted tourists who were trying to make Prescott from Santa Fe without a cent, he added the following line in his own way: 'No got a money, eat anyway.' "

Professor Bunch adds the following "briefs" as he terms them:

~~These~~

#### "BRIEFS.

"1. William R. Milligan was the first white man to settle in Round Valley in 1870. His irrigating ditch covered about a thousand acres. He brought in a ten-horse power threshing machine, and built a sawmill and a grist mill.

"2. Henry Springer opened the first store and gave his name to the town.

"3. Julius Becker founded the house of Becker Brothers in 1875.

"4. Sol Barth and brothers, Morris and Nathan, were the leading men of St. John, doing extensive trading and stock raising in addition to a heavy freighting business.

"5. Charlie Franklin afterwards known as A. F. Banta, was 'Alcalde' or 'Jefe de Paz' and writer for various papers, not yet having established a print shop of his own.

"6. Judge Stinson raised stock and farmed on Silver Creek (now Silver Lake and Taylor).

"7. C. F. Conley farmed Silver Lake; sold his produce at Fort Apache, where he was a partner; his favorite with the army officers and his special service in Indian Affairs were well known.



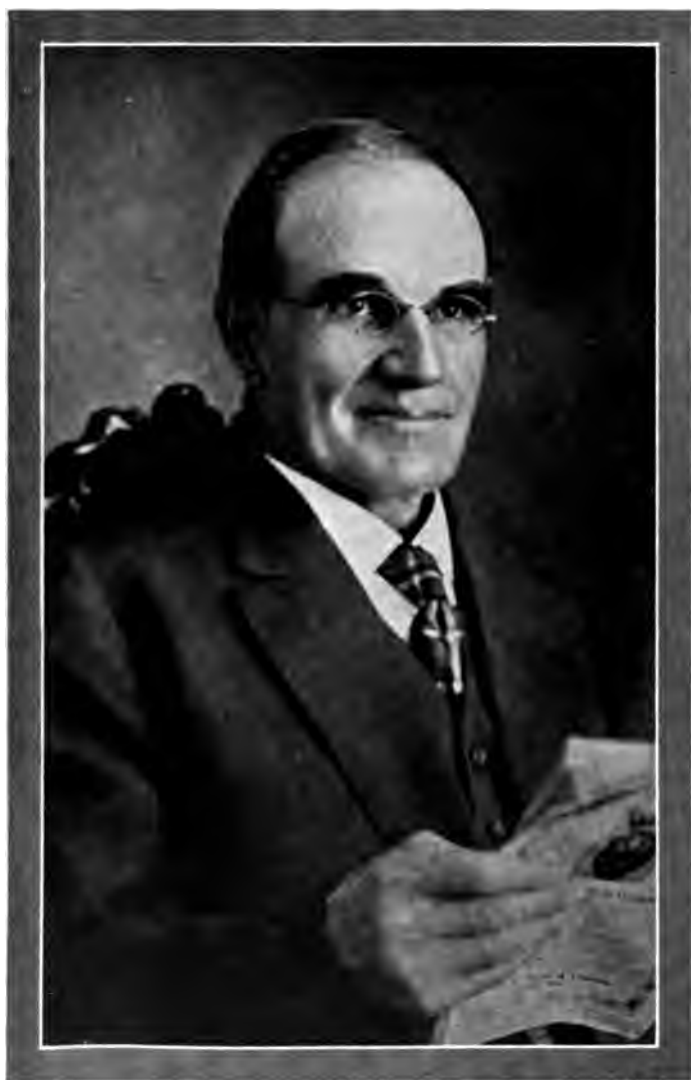
by General Crook in a letter which Mr. Cooley had framed and hung in his room.

"8. The first outlaws to infest the county were Mexicans. They robbed all travellers to or from Springerville and St. Johns. It was this band who robbed Colonel Brickwood at the 'lagoon' near Concho, taking his horse in exchange for an old mule, which he rode barebacked into Milligan's Fort, a distance of thirty-five miles. I can never forget the young man's appearance when he reached Milligan's. This gang went the way of all men who defy the law.

"9. A second band of outlaws from Utah and Nevada established headquarters in Springerville in 1878, and did much killing and robbing, but failing to agree over the division of the money taken from an old German near where Holbrook now stands, a shooting took place, in which several of the gang were killed, and one, 'Snyder,' whose real name was Cavanaugh, was badly wounded. It was while I was 'sitting up' with him, attending him as nurse, that he told me the cause of the trouble within their ranks.

"Several men were killed in St. Johns in a pitched battle with the Mexicans, and the people of Springerville finished the band. Nine repose on the hillside overlooking the mill near Eager. Other bands organized and seemed to run the country for short period of time, but when the citizens decided to put a stop to such outlawry, it was done with little fuss."





JAMES G. H. COLTER.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## MORE SETTLEMENTS (Continued).

INTERVIEW WITH JAMES G. H. COLTER—SETTLES IN ROUND VALLEY—LOCATES AT NUTRISO—INDIAN TROUBLES—INDUCES HENRY SPRINGER TO LOCATE IN VALLEY AND NAMES SPRINGERVILLE AFTER HIM—EXPERIENCE AS DEPUTY SHERIFF—FIGHT WITH JACK OLNEY—SELLS OUT NUTRISO TO MORMONS—FIGHT WITH GERONIMO AND VICTORIO—FRED T. COLTER IN FIGHT.

JAMES G. H. COLTER, father of State Senator Fred Colter from Apache County, contributes the following:

"I was born in 1844 in Cumberland County, near Amherst, Nova Scotia, Canada. Left home and came to Wisconsin when sixteen years of age, about the year 1860; came to Eau Claire, Wisconsin, and then worked for one man lumbering, and, when twenty years old, ran one of his camps. He was a lumber man. I then bought three hundred and twenty acres of pine timber, and went lumbering for myself. This was when I was twenty-one years of age. In 1872 I started to Arizona, and arrived in Colter, Arizona, or where Colter is now, where my sons still live. There were three in our party that came across the plains. We bought some horses at Atchison, Kansas, and brought three two-horse teams to Round Valley, Arizona, that I lumbered with in Wisconsin. I also brought a reaper and mower, my intention being to raise barley for

Camp Apache. That post was created to get the Indians on the reservation.

"The first Indian trouble I saw, we were coming across the Navajo Reservation, one corner of it, and they, the Indians, about a hundred and fifty of them, rode in front of us and stopped us. They were Navajoes, and we thought we were gone up sure, I was driving the head team, and other teams were following, and when the Indians stopped us, the boys said: 'We had better fire at them.' We had our guns, but I said, 'No, we better not.' We had one wagonload of provisions, flour, bacon, coffee and sugar, a year's provisions, and before they would let us go any further, we had to give them about half our provisions for toll, to get across the reservation, and we were glad to get off that easy. It was in the afternoon that this occurred. We drove all night and the next day until we tired out our horses.

"Then I took up land in Nutrioso, and with Mexican labor took out ditches and opened it up. The next Indian trouble I was at Nutrioso alone, fifteen miles from anybody. I had a log house on the farm and my horses were over there, but the other boys were in another valley. One day I looked down the valley, and saw about two hundred Indians coming up the valley, and I thought surely I was gone up that time. They came up to the house, but didn't seem to be on the war-path. They wanted provisions, and I hadn't very much, and I wouldn't give them any at first. Some of them came into the house. The young bucks were very sassy, but I had my gun and six shooter in my hands. At last the young

fellows went out of the house and the old fellows, three or four of them, came in, and then they got kind of good and I gave them some provisions. The young fellows were angry, and one young buck, he could talk good English, shook his fist at me, and said: 'You son of a bitch.' At last I gave the old man some provisions and they went on through the valley. I thought they were just going through, and started up to get some more logs for the houses. My nice harness was laying on the ground outside of the cabin, and I thought they would not come back. I went out alone and took my gun and six shooter, and at night when I came back, my fine harness was cut to pieces, and the straps and lines all gone. They had come back and cut the harness up and took all the best pieces, but they didn't take my horses; I had them up in the hills with me.

"I took out ditches and worked Mexicans, and raised a good crop of barley the first year, and threshed with sheep the first year for Camp Apache, furnished the barley to that post, and the next year I sent for a threshing machine to Atchison, Kansas, and it cost more to get it across the plains than the machine cost. Barley was eight and nine dollars a hundred at the time, to feed the cavalry horses.

"The reason I came out from Wisconsin, there was one man by the name of Moore ahead of us, and he sent word that barley was worth eight and nine dollars a hundred to feed the cavalry horses at Camp Apache, fifty-five miles from where I settled. Afterwards I bought a farm, one of the finest farms in the Little Colorado, from McCullough; the next two years I bought that farm

from him. The country at that time was infested with Indians and desperadoes, who were as bad, if not worse, than the Indians. At that time the whole State was four counties, Apache county being a part of Yavapai. I was the one who had Apache county separated from Yavapai. Everything was very high at that time, and I used to haul my goods from Albuquerque to live on. I was hauling goods one time from Henry Springer's store in Albuquerque, and I told Henry Springer he had better come into Round Valley, as it was called then, and put in a store; that the people were coming in and we would name the postoffice and little village after him, Springerville, and that was old Henry Springer.

"Bowers was sheriff of Yavapai County, and I was his deputy in that part of the county; it was about three hundred and fifty miles from Prescott, and I had to assess property and collect as far as Clifton, which was the first mining camp opened up. I had to travel through Indian country all the way; it was all Indians that day, you know. I always travelled in the night; mostly on horseback with pack animals; we would make fires to cook a little coffee, etc., and then I would put them out and move camp. When I laid down I would lay down in another place from where I had had my fire.

"Julius Becker had a little store at Springerville, and the desperadoes used to come in every two or three months, and tell him to go out of the store, and they would take all the tobacco and clothes, and drink all the whiskey they wanted, and dance and have a good time, and keep the store about a day and a night, and then send

word to Becker that he could come back and take charge of *their* store. He had a few goods and a barrel of whiskey setting there. One time they got to fighting in Springer's store, and shot two of themselves. At one time they took possession of the country, and I went to Camp Apache and the officer in command gave me three companies of soldiers, and came himself; the officer in command at Camp Apache and three companies of soldiers came out and restored order after a fight in which several of the desperadoes were killed.

"At another time I was threshing in Springer-ville Valley with my machine, the boys started over the valley, and I went over to a little Mexican town to get some things. I had neither six shooter nor gun. I was horseback and when I got up to the little store they told me that there was a man there that I had a warrant for, a desperado, and that he was in another room; that he had given up his arms, six shooter and guns, to them. I was not armed then either, and, foolishly, I went to arrest him. I went up to him and told him I had a warrant for his arrest. At that time they wore their pants inside their boots, and as I went up to him, he pulled a long dirk knife out of his bootleg and struck at me. The knife went straight between my eyes, then he kept following me back across the room with his knife and gave me five wounds in the body, near the heart, each time striking a rib, before I knocked him down and, with the assistance of others who had run in, overpowered him. I was cut up pretty bad. He got up after I knocked him down and came at me again. A fellow by



the name of Stanley rushed in and grabbed the knife, and cut his hand.

“Once I had a narrow escape; a desperado came in who had killed five men. He and his gang had killed the sheriff and five men who were following them in Colorado. The party, in two divisions, came into the valley the fall that I lived in Springerville. There was a reward of two thousand dollars for him and his companions. They had ambushed the posse that was following them, the sheriff and five men, and killed them all. Anyway they came into Round Valley and he rented a farm from a pretty hard case there who was going to leave the country. I threshed his grain, and when I got through threshing, he wouldn't pay me. He said he would pay me when he got ready, and it was close to Becker's little store, and he had two six shooters on him; he was sitting on his horse and I told him that I would take the barley and give him the price that he would get for it. He wouldn't do it, and I asked old Julius Becker to come up and take hold of the scales with me and we would carry them over and weigh the barley, so we took the scales and weighed out the barley, and this hard case just stood there. That night I went over to the house. I intended to go over to Nutrioso to the other ranch where my family lived, and I had my horse saddled down by the house after we had supper; there was three of us in the cabin. As I came out of the door—there was a bunch of bushes a little distance from the cabin,—and as I stepped outside I looked around and this same man was alongside this bunch of bushes. He fired at me and

cut the coat I had on, right in front of my breast. I was standing with the light behind me. I fell back into the house, and I guess he thought he had killed me. I didn't go out of the house that night any more.

"At one time I was going over to Nutrioso—Jack Olney was a hard case who kept a saloon at Springerville, and he was in the habit of beating up men over the head with a six shooter, and one time he beat up one of my men, a man by the name of Pearson, he came out to the ranch all beaten up. I made the remark then that if Olney ever tackled me, he would get the worst of it. A short time after that I went into Springerville; had my six shooter in the front of my trousers as we used to carry them those days when we didn't have a belt on. I went into Henry Springer's store, and there was no one there but the book-keeper. Olney had seen me coming into Springerville, and with two of his boys he sneaked into the store behind me, and walked right up behind me and putting a six shooter to my head, said: 'I heard you said that if I tackled you I would get the worst of it.' I said, 'Yes, I did,' for I knew that he would not shoot; if he had been going to shoot he never would have stopped to talk about it, and I said to him that if he would put his guns off and come outside, I would give him the beating of his life. He did this, and by this time two of my friends had come up, one of them being Murray who had come from Wisconsin with me; we all went outside and put off our guns and started in. He didn't know the first thing about boxing or fighting with his hands, and I was pretty good at it those days, having been in

the lumber camps in Wisconsin and holding my own there pretty well. He would come at me and try to grab me by the feet and ankles and try to throw me, and then I started to kick him when he tried to fight foul. I kicked him so bad that he ran over to one of his men to get his gun, but my two friends stood by me and told the other fellows that if they gave him a gun they would shoot them, so he didn't get the gun, but came back at me for more, and I gave him such a beating up that he was in bed for four weeks. After that he quit being a bully, anyone could lick him.

"All this time I was engaged in farming and stock raising, and contracting with the Government, and about the year 1879 I sold out my place and moved to New Mexico; sold out the Nutrioso farm to the first Mormon that ever came into that part of the country; bought more cattle and moved down to the San Francisco river in New Mexico, over the line, sixty-five miles above Clifton, Arizona, and the ranch is known as the 'W. S. Ranch' to this day. Then I moved five thousand head of cattle over on the San Francisco river, and put a butchershop in Deming, N. M. At the time the Santa Fe and the Southern Pacific met in Deming, I had butchershops at Deming, Silver City, in the mines, and the beef contract for Fort Bayard, nine miles out of Silver City.

"About the year 1882 I had 'dobe houses on the ranch, and about that time the Indians bothered me some. Where I had settled on the San Francisco river was right in between San Carlos and the Agua Caliente, the Hot Springs, where

they moved Geronimo and Victorio with the Apaches of their tribes; they moved them to the San Carlos reservation. They broke away and raided west of us, and then went down into Old Mexico, about six or seven hundred warriors, and we stayed there through all the time that they were still in Old Mexico. About the 28th day of April I said to a foreman I had by the name of Elliott,—I had twenty-eight head of horses running out to the spring between Mineral Creek and Deep Creek, where I used to water and feed them, five miles from the river,—I said to Elliott, ‘I’m going out to get those horses, and we’ll begin to-morrow to round up and brand cattle.’ Some of the cattle, a thousand head that I got from the Mormons from Utah, had nothing but a road brand, and they were beginning to go back. I got on my horse and put my six shooter and Winchester on, and started out. About two o’clock in the afternoon I got up to this spring, took the field glasses which I carried under my arm, and got on high ground and looked around, but no horses, and I looked around everywhere, and then looked over in the mines. There was a mining camp there, about eleven miners working. It was called the Kinney District; Kinney discovered it. They had cabins down there, and I looked over down on them. It was down in a canyon and they were prospecting for quartz. I looked all around, and about three o’clock I looked over there, and at last I got on my horses’ trail. They were going up what was called Deep Creek, about four miles or five, from Mineral Creek. This spring where my horses watered was fine, open country, and I got on the trail and

was following the horses, thinking they had just strayed off. Everything was quiet and though we had had some trouble the year before with a bunch of Indians, killing seven of them, they were quiet most of the time then, and when I was following my horses they seemed to be going right over the Mogollons towards the Hot Springs, the home of these Indians where they had been moved from, and at last it came dark on me; I could trail them no longer, and I started home and got to my ranch about twelve o'clock. When I got to my ranch there was Kinney and Chickering, two of the prospectors. They told me the Indians, between sundown and dark, coming from the Mogollons on the trail, had tackled their camp; that the Indians thought they had killed all of them, the prospectors, but Kinney and Chickering crawled off when they were shooting at them, and got away after it became real dark, and got to my ranch. I said that I would bet they had got my horses; that they must have come over the Mogollons in the forenoon and taken the horses that I was trailing, and that it must have been Geronimo and Victorio. My foreman said he believed the same, but this Kinney was an Indian guide, and he said he did not think so; that it was a bunch of Indians travelling through the country. That night, however, we got ready; we had plenty of guns and five or six hundred rounds of ammunition for each gun. We had portholes in the 'dobe house so we could fire out in every direction; we had built the house that way knowing we were in an Indian country. I had two fine corral horses which I always kept in the corral,

never turned them out, and Kinney asked me to give him and Chickering these two horses next morning and they would go up and see what the Indians were doing. I told them they had better not go as I was sure it was Geronimo and Victorio, and that they would catch them and kill them. My old foreman told me to give them the horses if they wanted to go, and I gave them the horses, but told them to go up on the bank, and not to go up the road in the brush. They didn't take my advice though, but rode up the road in the brush, and it wasn't but a half an hour until the horses came back on the run without their riders, and ran into the corral. The Indians could have killed the horses easy enough, but they thought they would come and take my ranch and take the horses, and they followed these horses right down, we could see them across the river; there seemed to be two or three hundred of them right out in the open ground some distance away, and we knew then that it was Geronimo and Victorio. I had fifteen men and we were all standing in the open in front of the house. We fired at the Indians, thinking they didn't have as good guns as we had, because we had as good guns as that day could produce, but when they fired at us a rain of bullets came like hail. I was shot through the leg, a flesh wound, and Murray, who came over the plains with me, was shot through the left arm, and Wilcox, who was standing in the door, fell dead. I hollered to my men to fall down and we did, and crawled into the house, they still firing at us, and we got into the house and there were protected. They surrounded the house, but we kept firing at them

through the portholes, and they tried to rush us all day, but when they would come near the house we would fire and we killed and wounded a large number of them. We fought from eight o'clock in the morning until ten at night, when they quit and went off aways and made fires and cooked their supper. They shot lots of my cattle for spite; my cattle were all around in the valleys and hills. I counted afterwards over six hundred of my cattle killed; fine American cattle. After everything quieted down my foreman took another man, John Foster, who afterwards died in the Soldier's Home in California, and they got them two horses and wrapped old sacks around their hoofs, and run the horses twenty-five miles to Duck Creek, where there was a ranch, and got other horses and rode into Silver City that night, and then the men of Silver City, everybody in Silver City, started out to help us; got wagons, horses and anything, and started out. The next morning, however, the Indians didn't tackle us again, and we thought it strange that we couldn't see any dead Indians lying around, but they took their dead away. It seems that they went over to Eagle Creek, where a man by the name of Stevens had married a squaw, and there was a lot of Indians there, adjoining the San Carlos Reservation, to get more ammunition from Stevens' Indians, but they wouldn't give them any, and they got into a fight there. Captain Kramer, with four companies of the 6th Cavalry was coming from Fort Apache; he heard the Indians was down in our country and he ran into this band of Geronimo and Victorio, had a fight with them, and lost twelve of his soldiers.

This was the reason they didn't tackle us again. I guess they couldn't get ammunition. Captain Kramer came over to the ranch that afternoon and I was never so glad to see anyone as I was to see him and his soldiers. They were the first to get there; the Silver City people didn't get in for quite a spell. The Indians ran away and went up the river, and at Los Lentes they swung around and killed all the people in Los Lentes, thirty-six families; never left a chick nor child. They went marauding and never spared anybody, killed people everywhere.

"Fred, my son, was a boy of perhaps three or four years of age, and he was with me in that fight. Both he and his mother were with me in that fight, and, speaking of Fred, I remember so often that when we thought him not old enough to think of such things he would say: 'Papa, when I get big I am going to be a good man and a great man,' and that has been typical of his actions, for he has developed a big country at Colter and spent much time and money for public welfare. He was County Supervisor of Apache County for five years, a Delegate to the Constitutional Convention and is now serving his second term in the State Senate (1918). He is also a Democratic National Committeeman and, although only thirty-nine years of age, I look forward to a great future for him. After this fight I took my family to Silver City, and kept them there all summer in the Hotel.

"I sold that ranch two years afterwards to an English company headed by Lord Woolsey's son; sold out my butcher shops in Deming, Silver



City, etc., and then went up the river sixty-five miles further, and bought four thousand cattle and a big ranch, and sixteen thousand sheep from a rich Spaniard, Don Luis Baca. I kept that ranch for three years, and sold that to another English company; that ranch was known as the 'S. U. Ranch.' Then I went to Kansas and stayed there to educate my children; kept a feeding ranch and raised fine cattle there for several years.

"I came back to Arizona along in the early nineties to where I had first settled. Fred was born right in the Nutrioso valley. I engaged in the stock business in the same place; my boys went into the same business and I have been travelling in California and all over for the last few years. I never worked very much after my boys grew up. I have three sons and one girl. The girl married Tom Phelps and she is living up there too. I was married in Springerville in 1875 to a southern girl by the name of Rosa Rudd, the daughter of Dr. Wm. Rudd, one of the first pioneers of that country.

"When I left Wisconsin for Arizona, we first came down in the boat from Eau Claire on the Chippewa river, run on a boat and come to Davenport, Iowa, and there I chartered cars and came to the end of the Santa Fe Railroad at Atchison, Kansas, and then started in the wagons. I drove one wagon; we had one wagon with grub, one with the reaper and mower, and one with tools, etc. One of the boys, Murray, was a blacksmith, and he made puzzle hobbles which we put on the horses at night. No one could take them off but ourselves and we drove

our horses clear through to Springerville, which was then Round Valley. We would take turns guarding them at night and we never lost a horse. We were the three Jims, Jim Colter, Jim Murray, and Jim Powell, the latter a Canadian who came out with us.

"The way we came to start was that this man Moore whom I spoke of, wrote to a man named Lamb; I didn't know Moore myself, but Lamb told us about it. Lamb had a little pair of mules, and he wanted to go to Arizona. I had good, heavy wagons, and he said he was going to take Moore's family, and when we got down to start on the boat, a drive of about fifty miles, he was there with his little pair of mules and the Moore family of five children. Lamb came to me and said that he was out of money, and wanted to know if he could come along anyhow. It provoked me to have him start off without telling me first that he was short, but I told him to come on anyhow, and we brought the whole bunch through with us. He was an old man and we didn't even have him stand guard at night, but took care of the whole bunch. I had to furnish them with grub and paid all their expenses."

## CHAPTER XV.

## SURVEYING LAND IN TERRITORY.

JOHN WASSON APPOINTED SURVEYOR GENERAL —  
BIOGRAPHY OF—HIS ACCOUNT OF CONDITIONS  
IN ARIZONA IN 1871—SURVEYS MADE IN  
SANTA CRUZ AND GILA VALLEYS AND IN  
VICINITY OF PRESCOTT—SPANISH AND MEXI-  
CAN LAND CLAIMS—MINING—EXPEDITION BY  
GOVERNOR SAFFORD — TIMBER, AGRICULTURE  
AND GRAZING.

John Wasson, who was appointed Surveyor General of the Territory by President Grant in 1870, came into the Territory during that year from California, holding that position for three terms, until August, 1882. During the time of his residence here he started the "Tucson Citizen." He returned to California at the time of his retirement from office, and, at the time of his death was President of the Board of Trustees of the Los Angeles Normal School. He died at Pomona, California, on January 16th, 1909, at the age of seventy-six years. In his first report to the Commissioner of the General Land Office at Washington, under date of August 30th, 1871, he gives a short but interesting account of conditions in Arizona at that time which follows:

**"REPORT OF THE SURVEYOR GENERAL  
OF ARIZONA TERRITORY.**

**"UNITED STATES' SURVEYOR GEN-  
ERAL'S OFFICE.**

**"Tucson, Arizona Territory,**

**"August 30th, 1871.**

**"Sir:—**

**"In compliance with your instructions of April 17th, 1871, I herewith present in duplicate a report of the surveying operations within the District of Arizona, for the fiscal year ending June 30th, 1871.**

**"Arizona was made a separate Surveying District by an Act approved July 11th, 1870; the President caused my commission to be executed July 12th, but the official notice of it did not reach me until November 5th, upon which day I executed my bond and entered upon the duties of the office.**

**"The records of all previous surveys in Arizona being in the California office, the year well advanced, and then being the most favorable season for field operations, I deemed it best to proceed to California, procure the official books, papers, etc., appertaining to this district, as well as other necessary supplies not obtainable here, and personally see that they were not delayed in transit. By so doing, early in January everything required to practically inaugurate field work was at hand, except my general instructions, which were not received until March 3rd. Knowing that unexpended balances were passed to the General Fund of the Treasury, and that less than half the fiscal year remained, I deemed**

it important to Arizona that surveys should commence, and therefore, without other directions than the law, I employed a complement of officers, entered into contracts, and ordered work to proceed, and am gratified to say that in all essential particulars, the Department approved the steps taken in advance of specific instructions. By such prompt action the appropriation of \$10,000 for surveys, less \$385.39, was exhausted prior to June 30th, and this small balance contracted for, and since that date the field work therefor has been executed, but not reported to your office.

"The surveys performed and their locality are set forth in the accompanying documents. The money should have been expended in executing surveys in the vicinity of Prescott, but the meridian line was not extended there, and the route of it lay through a section infested with hostile Indians. Applications to the commanding officer of the Military Department for an escort to protect the Deputy in the extension of the meridian, brought no response, and, therefore, I directed work performed in the Santa Cruz and Gila Valleys, where present and prospective population most demanded it. Surveys under the appropriation for the present fiscal year are now going forward in the settled valleys and timbered sections in and around Prescott under two deputies, and most of the farmers who have occupied their lands for from one to seven years, will soon have an opportunity to procure titles.

"In accordance with instructions, I submitted estimates, with some explanatory reasons there-

for for the surveying service in this District for the fiscal year ending June 30th, 1873, on the 27th July last, a copy of which is herewith transmitted and made part of this report. In that document I made no reference to the necessity of establishing the boundary line between New Mexico and Arizona. It is evident that this should be provided for by an appropriation at the ensuing session of Congress, for, before the close of the fiscal year ending in 1873, subdivisional surveys may be demanded in the vicinity of the Territorial boundary; and, aside from this consideration, there are many others, such as jurisdiction of courts, locality of voters and tax payers, that readily suggest themselves.

#### “LAND CLAIMS UNDER THE LAWS OF SPAIN AND MEXICO.

“A proviso of the appropriation act of July 15th, 1870, makes it the duty of the Surveyor-General of Arizona, under instructions from the Secretary of the Interior, ‘to ascertain and report upon the origin, character and extent of the claims to lands in said Territory under the laws, usages and customs of Spain and Mexico.’ Many such claims are reported to exist within this District, but as to their extent and validity I am unprepared to give an opinion. Verbal and written applications have been made to me by parties as agents or claimants, of such claims, for information as to the prescribed method of initiating and conducting proceedings necessary to establish their titles under the United States laws. To the end that they might be correctly informed, on March 1, I addressed a letter to the

General Land Office, a copy of which I transmitted to the Secretary of the Interior, suggesting that the contemplated instructions be furnished to my office. As yet, none have been received by me.

"Applications for but two mineral land surveys have been made, and none for subdivisional surveys under the Acts of May 3rd, 1862, and March 3rd, 1871, although under the latter act some are contemplated.

"The townsite of Arizona City has been surveyed and the completed plats and notes forwarded to the local and General Land Office. It is hoped that the subdivisional surveys will hereafter be extended over all townsites in advance of a demand for their entry, which is already done at Tucson and Prescott, and since the survey, the authorities of Tucson have filed an application for entry, and those of Prescott probably soon will.

#### "MINING.

"I have no statistics on mining, in Arizona, of sufficient accuracy to justify their presentation. However, it is a leading branch of industry now, and destined to be of vast importance. It would presently be very large but for the distances from cheap transportation, and notably because of the persistent hostility of the Indians in nearly every mining district.

"Very many mines, heretofore operated with large returns have been practically abandoned for the latter reason. Excepting near the Colorado River, life and property are not, at this time, regarded safe from Indian attacks in the mining sections; therefore, exploration is

checked, development hindered, cost of all supplies increased to astonishingly high figures, and none but extraordinarily rich mines can be operated with profit. The Vulture Mining Company at Wickenburg has some two hundred men on its payroll; its mine is fifteen miles from its mill, and more than once men and teams on the road hauling ore have been murdered and stolen. Still its operations go on at a profit, except to human life. Recent discoveries of silver-bearing lodes, at Bradshaw Mountain, have started a new settlement, strong enough for self-protection, but any road leading to it is very dangerous for small parties to travel. Labor continues on many old discoveries in Yavapai County, and the owners are determined to hold fast to their position, even amid danger, until safety is secured either by military power, or the population, which will certainly follow advancing railways. With the many terrible discouragements, numerous fortunes have been made by mining for the precious metals in Arizona. Led by Governor Safford, three hundred men are now in the unexplored mountains in search of mines, and incidentally, for timber and water, and desirable soils for tillage—grazing being first rate on nearly every mountain and table land, and in the valley. Large veins of *proven* good coal have been found in the White Mountains, near Camp Apache.

#### “TIMBER.

“Timber is much more abundant than generally supposed, even by the majority who have traversed the travelled highways of the Terri-




tory. Pine, oak, and ash are the better varieties, but mesquite, cottonwood, spruce, juniper and black walnut prevail, all of much value for fencing and fuel and primitive buildings. I speak from extended observation, when I declare that, except Washington, none of the Territories, excel this in quantity of timber.

### “AGRICULTURE.

“Excepting the rocky mesas or plateaus, craggy mountain sides, and here and there sandy and heavy alkali tracts, the soil of Arizona is very productive. Millions of acres which for want of rains in 1870, then appeared barren, are this year green with grass and reanimated vegetation. The town of Tucson is located upon what many of its own inhabitants term a barren mesa, yet wherever a flower, shrub, tree, or vine is planted and properly watered, the growth is vigorous. It is a great mistake, which too widely obtains, that the plateaus here are worthless. The recent rains have fully demonstrated the richness of the soil, and what may be done by irrigation. Areas of fifty and more miles, usually termed waterless deserts, are now green, and wherever persistent digging has been essayed, abundant water in wells has been found. Patient and skilfull labor will, in time, leave but a small portion of Arizona unproductive. In all parts there are valleys of unquestioned richness that may be cultivated profitably with little labor, and while many of them are occupied now, still more are monopolized by the savage Apache; yet each year one or more are penetrated by poor men, seeking a genial climate and independent means,

and though, in some cases, one-fourth their number has been slain in a single season, the entire abandonment of any one settlement has not followed. The staple crops are corn, wheat and barley. I have endeavored to procure accurate statistics of agricultural products, but only indefinite statements were obtained. With proper tillage and auspicious seasons as large crops are produced as anywhere in the United States. For lack of rain about Prescott and in the Gila and Salt River Valleys, the staple crops are, this year, below the average, though some barley fields are reported to have yielded from thirty to fifty bushels per acre. One one-hundred-acre lot of corn, in the Santa Cruz Valley, south of Tucson, I am confident, will yield seventy-five bushels to the acre. Other lots in the same valley will be very light, owing, chiefly, to a want of cultivation. The same may be said of other localities. The soil is demonstrated to be very productive, and improper tillage, or, rather, no tillage, after seeding in poorly prepared ground, has occasioned more short crops than even scarcity of rain or any other single cause.

“Every careful attempt at fruit growing has been a success. Grape cuttings planted last year in Salt River Valley, produced choice fruit this. No one doubts the adaptability of our valley soils and climate to the successful production of nearly every species of fruit grown in the different latitudes. But for Indian ravages, discouraging the people, Arizona would, to-day, have fine orchards and vineyards.



**“GRAZING.**

“As a whole probably Arizona is not surpassed by any State or Territory for grazing capacity. The area of rich pasturage is scarcely limited except by territorial boundaries. Reduced cavalry horses, carefully herded, regain their ordinary flesh and strength in two months, and beef cattle are fattened on grass at all seasons. Wherever the mountains have been explored, numerous streams and springs have been discovered, and, as before stated, water can be found by digging wells, as in other sections of our nation. Situated as we are, between the Gulf of Mexico and the Pacific Ocean, our markets will be always large, and prices good. Reduce the Indian to a state of peace, and average honesty, and liberal fortunes can nowhere else be more quickly and certainly made in the stock business. If the Government will give Arizona reliable peace, I shall, thereafter, regard any of its official positions with personal indifference.”

# **INDEX.**



# INDEX.

- ACEQUIAS—Ruins of ancient, 29.
- ADAMS, CHARLES—Founder of Adamsville, 46; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 91.
- ADAMS, CHARLES L.—One of first to put fields in cultivation in Salt River Valley, 73.
- ADAMS, JOHN AND WIFE—Claimed that daughter of, first white child born in Phoenix, 264.
- ADAMS, MISS—Marriage to Wm. Johnson in 1868, at Fort McDowell, 266, 267.
- ADAMSVILLE—One of first settlements along Gila River, 46; established by Charles Adams, 46; William Dumont, first postmaster, 46; postoffice name changed to Sanford, 46; first modern flouring mill in Territory erected at Adamsville by Richard Bros., 48.
- AGRICULTURE—Makes rapid strides in Salt River Valley, 115; estimate of arable land in Territory, 115, 116; land under cultivation, 116; production, 117; in Salt River Valley, 137 et seq.; first harvesting machinery brought in by Crete Bryan and W. J. Mulholland, 137; mentioned by Surveyor General John Watson in report, 314.
- ALLEN, JOHN B.—Pre-empts Maricopa Wells, 65.
- ALSAP, JOHN T.—One of organizers of Phoenix Ditch Co., 86; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 91; member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124; appointed Probate Judge of Maricopa County, 133; one of first lawyers in Phoenix, 213; mention of, 270, 271.
- ALVANEY, JOHN—With McKinnie erects building at East Phoenix, 99.
- AMMERMAN, JOHN—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 91.
- ANCIENT RUINS—See Ruins; Acequias.
- ANDERSON, J. W.—Pioneer of Florence and vicinity, 53; member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- ANDRADA, SYLVESTER—Early settler in vicinity of Florence, 53.
- APACHES—Band of wiped out by residents of Florence, 62, 63.
- AVERSCH, JOHN—Early farmer in Salt River Valley, 151.
- BAILEY, STEVE—Pioneer of Florence and vicinity, 56.
- BAIN, B. C.—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- BALZAN, CHARLES—Early settler in Tempe, 109.
- BANTA, A. F.—Mention of, 275.
- BARNARD, GEO. W.—Postmaster at Prescott, secures postal facilities for Phoenix, 221.
- BARNES, PETER—Member of Swilling party, 71.
- BARNETT, AARON—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.

- BARNETT & BLOCK**—Farm land at East Phoenix or Mill City, 99; early merchants in Phoenix, 198; early freighters, 216; mention of, 232.
- BARNUM, THOMAS**—One of organizers of Phoenix Ditch Co., 86; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92; first elected Sheriff of Maricopa County, 101.
- BARROCHE, J. R.**—One of first lawyers in Phoenix, 213.
- BARTH, SOLOMON**—Biography of, 276.
- BAUERLEIN, JULIUS**—First baker in Phoenix, 179, 214.
- BEACH, CHARLES**—Early settler in Tempe, 109.
- BEACH, CHARLES W.**—One of Arizona's early freighters, 216.
- BEATTY, JAMES C.**—Killed by Richard McGregor, 235.
- BECKER, GUSTAVE**—Builder of "Becker Commercial Company," 288.
- BECKER, JULIUS**—Pioneer merchant of Round Valley, 288.
- BEES**—First in Phoenix kept by J. Chamberlin, 215.
- BENTON, ROBERT**—Killed by Indians, 290.
- BERRANDO, —**—Locates at Holbrook, 280; his generosity and hospitality, 291.
- BERRY, JUDGE WILLIAM J.**—Purchases first lot in Town of Phoenix, 102, 164.
- BERTAN, GEORGE**—Early resident of Phoenix, 180.
- BICHARD & CO.**—Erect flouring mill at Phoenix, 98, 217; destruction of same by fire, 218, 219.
- BICHARD BROS.**—Erect first modern flouring mill in Territory at Adamsville, 48; erect flouring mill in Phoenix, but lose same through fire, 175; lose Phoenix property, 176.
- BIDWELL, THOMAS J.**—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- BIRTHS**—First in Phoenix disputed question; many claimants, 224, 225, 264.
- BLOCK, BENJAMIN**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- BOWERS & CO.**—Operate flouring mill on Agua Fria, 229.
- BOYD, JOHN**—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- BRADY, PETER R.**—Mention of, 54.
- BRANNAMAN, JOHN**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- BRECHT, W.**—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- BRICK BUILDING**—First brick building in Phoenix, 226.
- BRIDGES**—Lack of mentioned by General Rusling, 23.
- BRINLEY, C. H.**—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- BROADWAY, NOAH M.**—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88; one of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89; one of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- BROWN, GEORGE A.**—Old resident of Florence, his reminiscences, 50 et seq.
- BROWN, W. R.**—One of organizers of Hayden Milling & Farming Ditch Co., 88.
- BRYAN, GEORGE**—One of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90.

- BRYAN, J. M. (CRETE)**—One of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90; with W. J. Mulholland, brings into Salt River Valley first harvesting machinery, 137; one of Arizona's early freighters, 216.
- BUCK, GEORGE W.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92; marriage to Matilda Murray, first in Phoenix, 222, 223.
- BUILDING BRICK**—First manufactured in Phoenix, 226.
- BUKER, E. K.**—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92; first postmaster of Mill City, 119.
- BUNCH, PROF. E. C.**—Reminiscences of early days in Territory, 284 et seq.
- CADY, JOHN**—Opens first restaurant in Phoenix, 214.
- CANALS AND DITCHES**—Early irrigation canals in and around Florence, 51 et seq.; early irrigation canals in Salt River Valley, 85 et seq.; 146 et seq.
- CARLEY, BOB**—Early settler in Tempe, 109.
- CARPENTER, CROMWELL A.**—Follows Swilling party into Salt River Valley, 92; pioneer saloonkeeper of Phoenix, 192.
- CARR, LARKIN W.**—One of owners of stage station at Maricopa Wells, 66; mention of, 208.
- CASEY, JOHN**—Erects adobe walls for first school building in Phoenix, 246.
- CARTER, CHARLES**—Elected Justice of Peace, 123; appointed Justice of Peace by Gov. Safford, 133.
- CARTER, EUGENE**—Leads Pimas and Maricopas in raid on Apaches, 141, 142.
- CARTTER, HARLEY H.**—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124; elected President of Council vice Daniel H. Stickney, deceased, 125.
- CATE, C. F.**—One of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89; one of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90; early owner of property in Phoenix, 184.
- CAVANESS & COSGROVE**—Pioneer saloonkeepers of Phoenix, blacksmiths, freighters, etc., 192, 193, 216.
- CAVANESS, A. T.**—Claimed to have been first American born in Phoenix, 224.
- CAVANESS, JEREMIAH**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- CAVANESS, MATT**—First brewer in Phoenix, 179; partner of Frank Cosgrove in many enterprises, 192, 193.
- CHAMBERLIN, J.**—First to keep bees and manufacture honey in Phoenix, 215.
- CHAPMAN, —**—Member of Swilling Party, 71.
- CHENOWITH & FENTER**—Early freighters in Arizona, 216.
- CHENOWITH, "GUS"**—Conducts private school in Phoenix, 245.
- CHENOWITH, J. A.**—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88; one of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89; one of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90; kills Jim Favorite, 101.
- CHINESE**—First to arrive in Phoenix, 214.



- CHRISTMAS TREE**—Given to pupils of first school in Phoenix, 251.
- CHURCHES**—First Catholic Church in Central Arizona built in Florence, 57; establishment of in Salt River Valley, 235 et seq.; first Catholic service in Salt River Valley, 240, 241; services of Rev. Charles H. Cook among Pimas and Maricopas, 241.
- CLARK, MARION**—Pioneer of Round Valley, 277.
- COLLAS, A. & CO.**—Early merchants in Phoenix, 176.
- COLLINGWOOD, JOSEPH**—Opens first store in Florence, 49.
- COLLINS, MORTON**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- COLTER, FRED T.**—In fight with father against Victorio and Geronimo, 305.
- COLTER, JAMES G. H.**—Interview with; locates at Nutrioso; experiences with desperadoes, Indians and outlaws; fight with Jack Olney; fight with Geronimo and Victorio, 293 et seq.
- CONNELL, MIKE**—Tries to kill Dan Twomey, but is prevented by McGoldrick, 82; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- COOK, —**—First photographer in Phoenix, 215.
- COOK, REV. CHARLES H.**—Services of among Pima and Maricopa Indians, 241.
- COOLEY, C. E.**—Biography of, 275, 278.
- COOLEY, DAVID**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- COPELAND & STEEL**—Early butchers in Phoenix, 196.
- COPELAND, ISAAC**—One of rediscoverers and early owners of Silver King Mine, 60.
- COSEBROVE, FRANK**—Early blacksmith in Phoenix, 179; partner of Mat Cavaness in many enterprises, 192, 193.
- COTTON, JAMES M.**—With George E. Mowry erects finest building in Phoenix, 193 et seq.
- COTTRELL, DAVID**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- COULTER, GEORGE**—Mention of, 165.
- CREAGH, PADDY**—Deputy Sheriff killed by Indians, 290.
- CROWLEY, C. P.**—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88.
- CURTIS**—Contributes building material for first school building in Phoenix, 246, 247.
- DAGUERRA, A.**—One of Arizona's early freighters, 216.
- DARROCHE, J. R.**—First school teacher in Phoenix, 242.
- DAVIES, CHARLES**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- DAVIS, MR. AND MRS. BEN**—Mention of, 234.
- DAVIS, JAMES W.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- DEATH (NATURAL)**—First American in Phoenix, 226.
- DELEGATE TO CONGRESS**—See R. C. McCormick.
- DENNIS, JOHN T.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.
- DENSLINGER, JACOB**—Member of Swilling Party, 71.

- DICKINSON, I. L.—Early resident of Salt River Valley, 153.  
 DIETRICH, DANIEL—Member of firm of H. Morgan & Co., 205.  
 DOBBINS, MARCUS D.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124; elected Speaker of House of Representatives, 125.  
 DODD, HENRY W.—Biography of, 275.  
 DONNELLEY, GEO. W.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.  
 DUMONT, WILLIAM—First postmaster at Adamsville, 46.  
 DUPPA, BRIAN P. D. (DARRELL)—Member of Swilling Party, 71; names "Phoenix," 74; description and biography of, 74 et seq.; death of, 78, 79.
- EAST PHOENIX—See "Mill City."
- ELDERS, —.—One of Arizona's early freighters, 216.  
 ELIAS, JUAN—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.  
 ELLIOTT, JAMES McC.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92; appointed Supervisor of Maricopa County, 133.  
 ELLIOTT, R. M.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.  
 ELLIOTT, WM. K.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.  
 EVANS, —.—Partner of James Stinson, 280.  
 EWING, TOM—First postmaster at Florence, 58.
- FARLEY, TOM—Runs restaurant at East Phoenix, 100.  
 FAULKNER, A.—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91.  
 FAVORITE, JIM—Killed by Chenoweth in quarrel over sheriff's office, 101.  
 FENTER, MINNIE—Claimed to be first American born in Phoenix, 225.  
 FENTER, WILLIAM D.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.  
 FEW, —.—Manufactures first building brick in Phoenix, 226.  
 FIELDS, A. W.—One of organizers of Hayden Milling & Farming Ditch Co., 88.  
 FISH, E. N., & CO.—Among first business men in Florence, 50; mention of, 232.  
 FITZPATRICK, MRS. ALABAMA—Early school teacher in Phoenix, 249; marriage to John Montgomery, 252.  
 FITZGERALD, HENRY—Marriage of to sister of John F. Cramp-ton, 268, 269.  
 FITZGERALD, J. H.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124; commits suicide at Mill City, 136.  
 FLAKE, W. J.—Buys out James H. Stinson on Silver Creek, 280.  
 FLORENCE—One of first settlements along Gila River, 46; first house in built by Levi Buggles, 48; first store in opened by Joseph Collingwood, 49; Tom Ewing first postmaster at, 50; residents of wipe out band of Apaches, 62, 63; official naming of by Maj. Ben. C. Truman, 113; named after sister of Gov. McCormick, 113.  
 FLOURING MILL—Erected at Mill City by W. B. Hollings & Co., 96; erected at Phoenix by Richard & Co., 96; Territory, 228, 229.

- FORBES, DR.—One of first physicians in Phoenix, 195, 196.  
 FORD, WILLIAM W.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93.  
 FORSEE, GEORGE W.—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 92.  
 FORT MOHAVE—Conditions at in 1868, 42.  
 FORT WHIPPLE—Description of by Genl. Busling, 39, 40.  
 FOSTER, JOHN—Mention of, 304.  
 FOURTH OF JULY—Celebration in Phoenix in 1872, 189.  
 FOUTS, J. E.—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91.  
 FOWLER, W. L.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.  
 FRANKLIN, MISS LAUBA B.—Marries John J. Gardiner, 192.  
 FRATERNAL ORDERS—Masonic and Odd Fellows, 227.  
 FREIGHTERS—List of early ones, 216.  
 FREIGHT RATES—Mentioned by General Busling, 2.  
 FRENCH, S. M.—Early resident of Phoenix, 180.  
 FRUITER, W. D.—Early resident of Phoenix, 180.  
 FUSON, GEORGE W.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93.  
 FYE, JOSEPH—One of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90.
- GARDINER, JOHN J.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93; first hotelkeeper in Phoenix, 179; biography of, 188 et seq.  
 GARDINER, MRS. J. J.—Only American woman in Phoenix in 1871, 225.  
 GARFIELD, —.—One of Arizona's early freighters, 216.  
 GARRETT, W. M.—One of organizers of Hayden Milling & Farming Ditch Co., 88.  
 GEORGE, JOHNNY—Early owner of property in Phoenix, 183; with Jack Walters erects fine building in Phoenix, 197; biography of, 198.  
 GILA RIVER—Settlements along, 45 et seq.  
 GILA VALLEY—Described by Genl. Busling, 4.  
 GILMORE, CHAPLAIN—Of Fort Whipple, holds services in Prescott, 236, 237.  
 GLOVER, W. A.—Early school teacher in Phoenix, 245.  
 GOLDBERG BROS.—Mention of, 194.  
 GOLDMAN, ADOLF—Member of firm of Goldman Bros., 203.  
 GOLDMAN BROS.—Early Phoenix merchants, 203.  
 GOLDMAN, CHARLES—Member of firm of Goldman Bros., 203.  
 GOLDMAN, LEO—Member of firm of Goldman Bros., 203.  
 GOLDWATER BROS.—Early merchants in Phoenix, 207; contribute building material for first school building in Phoenix, 246.  
 GOLDWATER, JOE—Member of firm of Goldwater Bros., 207; in company with Dr. W. W. Jones and Mike Goldwater attacked by Indians; receives wound in back, 211, 212; first postmaster of Ehrenberg, 212.  
 GOLDWATER, JULIUS A.—Early owner of property in Phoenix, 185.

- GOLDWATER, MIKE**—Member of firm of Goldwater Bros., 207; in company with Dr. W. W. Jones and Joe Goldwater attacked by Indians, 211, 212.
- GOLDWATER, MORRIS**—Early owner of property in Phoenix, 185; becomes partner in firm of Goldwater Bros.; first telegraph operator in Phoenix, 210, 211.
- GOODWIN, F. H.**—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- GOVERNOR**—See McCormick.
- GRANIO, S.**—Early butcher in Phoenix, 196.
- GRANT, JAMES**—Mention of, 165; early stage proprietor and owner of property in Phoenix, 184, 214, 215.
- GRAY, COLUMBUS H.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93; appointed Supervisor of Maricopa County, 133; biography of by widow, 254 et seq.
- GRAY, MRS. MARY A.**—Reminiscences of early times in Salt River Valley, 254 et seq.
- GRAZING**—Mention of, 117; mentioned by Surveyor General John Wasson in report, 316.
- GREENHAW, HOSEA G.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93.
- GREGG, GENERAL**—Personally commands expedition against Indians, 37.
- GRIFFIN, BENJAMIN F.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93.
- GRIFFIN, MARTIN P.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93; appointed Supervisor of Maricopa County, 133; appointed Townsite Commissioner of Phoenix, 181.
- GRIFFIN, N. L.**—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- GRINNELL & CO.**—Start mercantile establishment at Maricopa Wells, 65.
- GROVER, EDWIN W.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93; member of firm of W. B. Hellings & Co., 231.
- GROVES, REV. ALEXANDER**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93; first regularly ordained minister of Methodist Episcopal Church South appointed for Arizona, 235; his arrival and services in the Salt River Valley, 236 et seq.
- GROWL, MILTON B.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93.
- GRUBB, C. H.**—Member of firm of W. B. Hellings & Co., 231.
- HAMILTON, D.**—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91.
- HAMILTON, M. H.**—Early resident of Phoenix, 180.
- HAMMONDS, G. A.**—One of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89.
- HANCOCK, MISS CARRIE G.**—Early school teacher in Tempe and Phoenix, 249.
- HANCOCK, WILLIAM A.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93; with George Mowry commences building at East Phoenix, 100; appointed first Sheriff of Maricopa County, 102, 133; surveys town of Phoenix, 102; erects first store building in Phoenix, 134, 171; one of first lawyers in Phoenix, 179, 213; succeeds John M. Olvany as postmaster at Phoenix, 221; biography of, 270, 271.
- HARDYVILLE**—Description of by Genl. Rusling, 41.

- HABGRAVE, ELI TAYLOR**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93; becomes partner of "Pete" Holcomb in first butcher shop in Phoenix, 196.
- HARRIS, JOHN C.**—Pioneer of Florence and vicinity, 55.
- HARTT, J. B.**—Mention of, 120.
- HAYDEN, CHAS. T.**—One of organizers of Hayden Milling & Farming Ditch Co., 88; founder of Tempe, 103, 104; experience as Probate Judge in Tucson, 104; constructs large flouring mill at Tempe, 220, 221.
- HAYDEN MILLING & FARMING DITCH CO.**—Notice of appropriation of water from Salt River, 88.
- HAYDEN'S FERRY**—See "Tempe."
- HAYS, TOM C.**—Early resident of Phoenix, 180.
- HELLINGS & VEIL**—Mention of, 232.
- HELLINGS, E. E.**—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.
- HELLINGS, WM. B.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 93.
- HELLINGS, W. B. & CO.**—Erect flouring mill at Mill City, 98; increase in business, 119, 121.
- HENDERSON, J. M.**—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91.
- HEYNE, C. E.**—First assayer in Phoenix, 215.
- HICKEY, PHILIP K.**—Mention of, 226.
- HILDEBRAND, C. M.**—Early settler in Tempe, 110.
- HILL, JOHN J.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.
- HILTIBRAND, CHRISTOPHER C. N.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.
- HOAGUE, THOMAS J. L. (JOHN)**—Member of Swilling Party, 71; first Notary Public in Phoenix Settlement, 82.
- HOLCOMB, JAMES P. (PETE)**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94; first butcher in Phoenix, 196.
- HOLLAND, PAT**—Early settler in vicinity of Florence, 52.
- HOLMES, GEORGE W.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.
- HOLMES, WM. A. (HUNKADORA)**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.
- HOOPER, GEO. B., & CO.**—Conduct mercantile establishment at Maricopa Wells, 65.
- HOOPER, WM. B., & CO.**—Mention of, 226.
- HUNT, J. L.**—Puts shingle roof on first school building in Phoenix, 246.
- HUBBELL, J. LORENZO**—Reminiscences of early days in the Territory, 281 et seq.
- HUNTER, THOMAS THOMPSON**—Biography of, 260; early reminiscences of Salt River Valley, 260 et seq.; mentions Indians eating caterpillars, 263.
- INDIAN RESERVATIONS**—Pima and Maricopa described by General Rusling, 8.
- INDIANS**—Apaches and River Indians on warpath, 1; description of Pimas and Maricopas by Genl. Rusling, 8 et seq.; popula-

- tion of, 32; raids and murders by, 33 et seq.; band of Apaches wiped out by residents of Florence, 62, 63; Maricopa Charley's ridiculous purchases, 68; Pimas and Maricopas under Eugene Carter, make raid on Apaches, 141, 142; Pimas and Maricopas eat caterpillars, 263; murders by, 289, 290.
- IRRIGATION—See Canals and Ditches.
- IRVINE, EDWARD—Description of J. W. Swilling's ranch and home, 120; one of first lawyers in Phoenix, 179, 213; biography of, 187.
- IRVINE, J. A. R.—Mention of, 188.
- IRVINE, THOMAS—Mention of, 188.
- JACKSON, CALVIN—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- JACKSON, JESSE—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- JACKSON, S.—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- JAEGER, L. J. F.—Stockholder in Swilling Irrigating Canal Co., 71.
- JAMES, GEORGE—Early farmer in Salt River Valley, 140.
- JOHNSON, WM.—Married to Miss Adams in 1868 at Fort McDowell, 266, 267.
- JONES, DR. W. W.—Experience with Michael Wormser, 199, 200; in company with Joe and Mike Goldwater attacked by Indians, 211, 212; one of Arizona's early freighters, 216.
- KELLOGG, BENJAMIN W.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.
- KENDALL, L. C.—Early carpenter in Phoenix, 179.
- KENYON, CHARLES H.—Marriage of to Mary E. Moore, one of first in Phoenix, 208, 223.
- KIRKLAND, WILLIAM H.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94; mention of, 169; daughter of claimed to be first American born in Phoenix, 225.
- KITCHEN, PETE—Description of trip from his ranch to Sonora, 44.
- KNOTT, JOS. W.—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- LA FORCE, WM.—One of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89.
- LARSEN, JOHN—Member of Swilling Party, 71; first to take up homestead claim in Salt River Valley, 82.
- LATIMER, —.—Stockholder in Swilling Irrigating Canal Co., 71.
- LAVERY, ROBERT—One of organizers of Hayden Milling & Farming Ditch Co., 88.
- LE BARR, JOHNNY—Mention of, 196.
- LEE, JAMES—Member of Swilling Party, 71.
- LEGAL—First District Court in Maricopa County presided over by Judge Charles A. Tweed, 136; Chief Justice Wm. F. Turner succeeded by John Titus, 136; William A. Hancock, E. Irvine, John T. Alsap and J. R. Barroche first lawyers in Phoenix, 213.
- LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY—Convening of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124; personnel of, 124; creates Maricopa County, 127 et seq.; passes law for establishment of public schools, 242.

- LEON, FRANCISCO S.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- LILES, ABRAHAM B.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.
- LONG, ANTHONY—Pioneer of Round Valley and vicinity, 277.
- LONG WILLIAM H.—One of rediscoverers and early owners of Silver King Mine, 60.
- LOPEZ, VICTORIO—Pioneer of Florence and vicinity, 56.
- LOBING, GEORGE—Early merchant in Phoenix, 176, 177.
- LUKE, A.—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- LUMBER—Scarcity of in Phoenix, 227.
- McCORMICK, GOV. R. C.—With wife joins Genl. Rusling's party, 3; when Delegate to Congress has postoffice name of Adamsville changed to Sanford to satisfy personal grudge, 47.
- McCULLOUGH, JOE—Pioneer of Round Valley and vicinity, 277.
- McDERMOTT, C. C.—Clerk of first District Court to be held in Maricopa County, 136; first notary public in Maricopa County, 213.
- McGOLDRICK, THOMAS—Member of Swilling Party, 71; saves Dan Twomey's life when Mike Connell tries to kill him, 82.
- McGRATH, MICHAEL—Member of Swilling Party, 71.
- McGREGOR, RICHARD—Kills James C. Beatty, 235.
- McINTOSH, T. W.—Mention of, 208.
- McKEAN, REV. FRANKLIN—Mention of, 170, 179; arrival and labors in Phoenix, 236.
- McKINNIE, JAMES B.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95; with Alvaney erects building at East Phoenix, 99.
- McMULLEN, J.—One of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90.
- McPHERSON, T.—One of organizers of Monterey Ditch Co., 91.
- McWILLIAMS, THOMAS—Member of Swilling Party, 71.
- MARICOPA CHARLEY—Story of his ridiculous purchases told by John F. Crampton, 68.
- MARICOPA COUNTY—Created by Sixth Territorial Legislature, 127 et seq.; comments on creation of, 129 et seq.; text of bill creating, 130 et seq.; officials appointed by Governor Safford, 133; first courthouse erected by Hancock & Monihon, 134, 135, 173.
- MARICOPAS—Description of by Genl. Rusling, 8 et seq.
- MARICOPA WELLS—Description of, 64, 65; pre-empted by John B. Allen, 65.
- MARMADUKE, ANDREW J.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- MARRIAGES—Charles H. Kenyon and Mary E. Moore one of first in Phoenix, 208, 209, 223; George Buck and Matilda Murray first in Phoenix, 222, 223; marriage of Wm. Johnson and Miss Adams at Fort McDowell, 266, 267; marriage of sister of John F. Crampton to Henry Fitzgerald, 268, 269.
- MARTIN, LUTHER—Pioneer, 280.
- MARYVILLE—Founded by William Rowe, 232, 233; rise and fall of, 233, 234.
- MASON, CHARLES G.—First settler in Florence, 49; one of rediscoverers and early owners of Silver King mine, 60.

- MASONIC LODGE—First in Territory and first in Phoenix, 227.
- MAXWELL, THOMAS—Robs parties at Maryville and is killed resisting arrest, 234, 235.
- MELVIN, JOSEPH—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- MENASSEE & CO.—Early merchants in Phoenix, 179, 187.
- MENASSEE, HEYMAN—Early owner of property in Phoenix, 183.
- MERCER, JAMES L.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95; Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124; appointed Recorder of Maricopa County, 133.
- MESQUITE—Description of by Genl. Busling, 4.
- MESQUITE SCHOOL—E. M. Johnson first teacher at, 243.
- METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH SOUTH—First Protestant organization established in Salt River Valley, 235.
- METZLER, FRANK S.—Member of Swilling Party, 71.
- MEYER, CONRAD—Early settler in Tempe, 109.
- MILL CITY—W. B. Hellings & Co., erect flouring mill at, 98; early residents, 100 et seq.; fight with West Phoenix for location of townsite, 101; receives postal facilities, 119; E. K. Buker first postmaster, 119; description of, 123.
- MILLER BROS.—Sam and Jake, early freighters, 216.
- MILLER, JACOB—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- MILLER, WILLIAM—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95.
- MILLER, WINCHESTER—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95; biography of, 104 et seq.
- MILITARY—Genl. Busling visits Arizona to inspect posts, 1; expeditions against Indians, 36.
- MILLIGAN, WILLIAM R.—Pioneer of Round Valley, 276.
- MINES & MINING—Vulture Mine, 24 et seq.; mines around Prescott, 32; discovery of Silver King mine by Sullivan, 58; rediscovery of same by Isaac Copeland and associates, 60; mentioned by Surveyor-General John Wasson in report, 312.
- MING, DANIEL H.—With James Stinson locates on Silver Creek, 280; biography of, 280, 281.
- MITCHELL, J. E. G.—Operates first carriage factory in Phoenix, 214.
- MONIHON, JAMES D.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94; becomes prominent in Early Phoenix, 200 et seq.; biography of, 202.
- MONTEREY DITCH CO.—Notice of appropriation of water from Salt River, 90, 91.
- MONTEZUMA—Profile of on mountain, 11, 66, 67.
- MONTGOMERY, JOHN B.—Purchases Darrell Duppa's place in Salt River Valley, afterwards Montgomery's Addition to Phoenix, 75; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95; appointed Townsite Commissioner of Phoenix, 181.
- MOON, JOHN—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95; elected constable, 123.
- MOORE & CARR—Mention of, 232.
- MOORE, JAMES A.—One of owners of stage station at Maricopa Wells, 66.
- MOORE, JOHNNIE—Owns property at East Phoenix, 100.
- MOORE, MARY E.—Marriage of to Charles H. Kenyon, one of first in Phoenix, 208, 209, 223.



- MOORE, MRS. JAMES A.—Mention of, 208.  
MOREAS, ANTONIO—Member of Swilling Party, 71.  
MORGAN, H. & CO.—Early owners of property in Phoenix, 183; early merchants, 205, 206.  
MORGAN, HENRY—Conducts trading post in vicinity of Maricopa Wells, 65; senior member of firm of H. Morgan & Co., description of, 206.  
MORGAN, WILLIAM—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.  
MORMONS—Purchase water rights on Little Colorado, and begin agricultural development of country, 288.  
MORRIS, MARK—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.  
MORRELL, MATTHEW R.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95.  
MORRELL, WILLIAM W.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95.  
MOWRY, GEORGE E.—With William A. Hancock commences building at East Phoenix, 100; appointed Treasurer of Maricopa County, 133; with James M. Cotton erects finest building in Phoenix, 193 et seq.  
MULHOLLAND, W. J.—With Crete Bryan brings into Salt River Valley first harvesting machinery, 137.  
MURPHY & DENNIS—Early merchants in Phoenix, 175; early freighters, 216.  
MURPHY, JAMES—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.  
MURRAY, —.—Wounded by Indians, 289.  
MURRAY, JAMES F.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.  
MURRAY, MATILDA—Marriage to George Buck first in Phoenix, 222, 223.  
MURRAY, WM. P.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 94.  
NELSON, JAMES—Early settler in Salt River Valley killed by Jim Smith, 81.  
NELSON, PETER—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95.  
NEWSPAPER CORRESPONDENTS—Early ones in Maricopa County, 215, 216.  
NORRIS, COLEMAN—Mention of, 259.  
NOTARY PUBLIC—C. C. McDermott, first one in Maricopa County, 213.  
NOVINGER, SIMON—Biography of, 271, 272.  
NUTRIOSO—James G. H. Colter locates at, 294.  
OCHOA, ESTEVAN—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.  
ODDFELLOWS—INDEPENDENT ORDER OF—First Lodge in Territory and first Lodge in Phoenix, 227.  
OLVANY, JOHN M.—First postmaster at Phoenix, 221; succeeded by W. A. Hancock, 221.  
O'NEILL, WILLIAM J.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.

- ORME, LINDLEY H.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95.
- OSBORN, JOHN P.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95; appointed Townsite Commissioner of Phoenix, 181.
- OSBORN, NERI—Gives story of location of Phoenix townsite, 99 et seq.
- OSBORN, WM. L.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95.
- OTERO, JESUS—Early resident of Phoenix, 180.
- OURY, GRANVILLE H.—Mention of, 120.
- OUTLAWS—In early days of Territory, 292.
- PAH-UTE COUNTY—Larger portion annexed to Nevada and balance reverts to Mohave County, 128, 129.
- PAINTED ROCKS—Referred to by Genl. Rusling, 6.
- PARKER, J.—Second school teacher in Phoenix, 245.
- PARKER, JAMES—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- PARKER, JOHN Y.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- PARKER, WILLIAM—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- PATTERSON, BENJAMIN F.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 95.
- PEARSON, RICHARD E.—Early carpenter in Phoenix, 179; makes desks for and does carpenter work on first school building in Phoenix, 246.
- PEEPLES, A. H.—One of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90; manufactures first beer in Phoenix, 193.
- PERALTA, MIGUEL L.—Early Phoenix merchant, 203.
- PERKINS, CHARLES R.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- PETERSON, NIELS—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96; biography of, 111, 112.
- PHILLIPS, JOHN H.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- PHOENIX—Location of townsite, 99 et seq.; fight with East Phoenix for location of townsite, 101; sales of lots and blocks, 102 et seq.; official naming of by Maj. Ben C. Truman, 112 et seq.; selection of townsite and sale of lots, 158 et seq.; William Smith, first merchant in, 174; other merchants, 175 et seq.; Townsite Commissioners appointed by Judge Alsap, 181; work of, 181 et seq.; first churches, 235 et seq.; first schools, 242 et seq.; erection of first school building in, 246, 247.
- PHOENIX DITCH CO.—Notice of appropriation of water from Salt River, 85.
- PHOENIX SETTLEMENT—Named by Darrell Duppa, 74.
- PHY, JOSEPH—See "Fye."
- PIERSON, J. H.—Early owner of property in Phoenix, 184.
- PIMAS—Description of by Genl. Rusling, 8 et seq.
- PINAL COUNTY—First efforts to create, 57; bill to create introduced in Sixth Legislature, 125; substitute bill creating County of Maricopa introduced and carried, 127.

- POPE, W. H.—Pioneer barber of Phoenix, 193.
- POSTMASTER—Joe Goldwater first postmaster at Ehrenberg, 212; John M. Olvany first postmaster at Phoenix, 221; Charles Whitlow first postmaster of Maryville, 234.
- POSTON, C. D.—Attempts to establish Parsee religion on Primrose Hill in vicinity of Florence, now known as Poston's Folly, 64.
- POSTON'S FOLLY—Primrose Hill in vicinity of Florence, known as, 63, 64.
- PRESCOTT—Described by Genl. Rusling, 31.
- PRESCOTT DITCH CO.—Notice of appropriation of water from Salt River, 87, 88.
- PRIEST, J. T.—Early settler in Tempe, 109; biography of, 110, 111.
- PRIMROSE HILL—Mountain in vicinity of Florence made famous by C. D. Poston; also known as "Poston's Folly," 63, 64.
- REGAN, BENJAMIN W.—One of rediscoverers and early owners of Silver King Mine, 60.
- RICHMOND, JAMES—Killed by Indians, 290.
- RIGGS, B. F.—One of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89; one of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90.
- ROACH, JOHN—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96; pioneer saloonkeeper in Phoenix, 192.
- ROADS—Lack of mentioned by General Rusling, 23.
- ROBERTS, GEORGE—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96; with A. H. Peeples manufactures first beer in Phoenix, 193; first milkman in Phoenix, and, with J. Romain, first to manufacture wine, 215.
- RODGERS, LEWIS—Early farmer in Salt River Valley, 140.
- ROGERS, ————One of Arizona's early freighters, 216.
- ROHLING, MORITZ—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- ROMAIN, J.—With George Roberts, first to manufacture wine in Phoenix, 215.
- ROMANO, RAMON—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- ROPER, THOMAS D.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- ROUND VALLEY—Settlers in, 285.
- ROWE, WILLIAM—Locates at Maryville, takes out ditch and cultivates ranch, 232, 233; victim of many Indian raids, 233.
- RUGGLES, LEVI—Builds first house in Florence, 48; Register and Receiver of Land Office, 48.
- RUINS—Of ancient acequias and canals, 29; of ancient buildings, 30.
- RUMBERG, C. D.—First to install machinery for grinding sugar cane and manufacturing syrup in Phoenix, 215.
- RUMBERG, J. DIRELY—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- RUSH, JOHN A.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- RUSLING, GENERAL JAMES E.—As agent of War Department to inspect posts, comes to Arizona, 1; describes conditions, 2 et seq.

- ST. JOHNS**—Commencement of by John Walker, 275, 276; Sol. Barth one of builders of, 276; coming of J. Lorenzo Hubbell, 281.
- SAFFORD, GOV. A. P. K.**—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87; signs bill creating Maricopa County, 127; appoints officials for, Maricopa County, 133.
- SAGUARO (GIANT CACTUS)**—Described by Genl. Busling, 7.
- SALOONS**—Number of in Phoenix in 1872, 206.
- SALT RIVER DITCH COMPANY**—Notice of appropriation of waters of Salt River, 86.
- SALT RIVER FARMING DITCH CO.**—Notice of appropriation of water from Salt River, 89, 90.
- SALT RIVER VALLEY**—Settlement of, 69 et seq.; appropriations of water for irrigation, 85 et seq.; progress of and agriculture in, 137 et seq.; first harvesting machines brought in by Crete Bryan and W. J. Mulholland, 137; canals and ditches, 146 et seq.; progress of, 228 et seq.; early churches in, 235 et seq.; early schools in, 241 et seq.
- SALT RIVER VALLEY ASSOCIATION**—Formation of and appointment of John T. Alsap, James Murphy and J. T. Perry appointed commissioners to survey townsite and sell lots, 162 et seq.
- SANDERSON, W.**—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88.
- SANFORD**—Postoffice name given to Adamsville, 47; much contention over change of name, 47.
- SAN XAVIER DEL BAC**—Description of by Genl. Busling, 15 et seq.
- SARRELLO, A. B.**—One of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90.
- SAWYER, "FRENCHY"**—One of first to put fields in cultivation in Salt River Valley, 73; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- SAYERS, H.**—Whitewashes walls of first school building in Phoenix, 246.
- SCHOOLS**—Establishment of in Salt River Valley, 241 et seq.; first school opened in Phoenix, 242; two districts created, Phoenix and Mesquite, 243.
- SHARP, NATHANIEL**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- SHAYER, MISS ELLEN**—Early schoolteacher in Phoenix, 247; marriage of to John Y. T. Smith, 249.
- SHAW, FRANCIS A.**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96; appointed Supervisor of Maricopa County, 133.
- SHORTELL, THOMAS**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- SHOUP, S.**—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- SHOW LOW**—Named by C. E. Cooley, 279.
- SHULTIS, DAVID**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- SILVER KING MINE**—Discovery of by Sullivan, 58; rediscovery of by Isaac Copeland and associates, 60.
- SIMMONS, BENJAMIN**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.

- SKULL VALLEY—Description of by Genl. Rusling, 27.
- SMITH, A. B.—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87.
- SMITH, BYRON W.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- SMITH, CASANDRA—First American natural death in Phoenix, 226.
- SMITH, JAMES (JIM)—Member of Swilling Party, 71, 72; kills James Nelson, 81.
- SMITH, JOHN Y. T.—Builds first house in Salt River Valley and laid out road to Fort McDowell, 70.
- SMITH, REES—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- SMITH, WILLIAM—First merchant in Phoenix, 174.
- SORRELLS, ALHIRA B.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- SPINAS, JOE—Early settler in vicinity of Florence, 52.
- SPRINGER, HENRY—Pioneer merchant of Round Valley, 288; induced to come to Arizona by James G. H. Colter, 296.
- SPRINGERVILLE—Growth of, 288.
- STANFIELD, ————One of Arizona's early freighters, 216.
- STARAR, ANDREW—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- STARAR BROS.—Early residents of Salt River Valley and Phoenix; partners of J. D. Monihon, 200 et seq.
- STARAR, JACOB—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- STEARNs, CHAS. W.—Early owner of property in Phoenix, 185; contributes building material for first school building in Phoenix, 246, 247.
- STEELE & McCARTY—Early hotelkeepers in Phoenix, 189.
- STEPHENS, VARNEY A.—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88; one of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89; follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- STEVENS, HIRAM S.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- STICKNEY, DANIEL H.—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124; elected President of Council, but dies before end of session, 124, 125.
- STILES, MARTIN A.—First Receiver of Land Office at Florence, 57.
- STINSON, JAMES—With Evans and Dan Ming locates on Silver Creek, 280.
- STINSON, RICHARD—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96; appointed District Attorney of Maricopa County, 133.
- STONE, BANNAJAH H.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- STOREY, JAMES F.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- STRODE, STEPHEN S.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.
- SULLIVAN, ————Original discoverer of Silver King Mine, 58, 59; his subsequent history, 59 et seq.
- SUMMERS, JOHN B.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 96.

- SURVEYS OF LAND**—Report of John Wasson, Surveyor-General, 309 et seq.
- SWILLING IRRIGATING CANAL CO.**—Take out Swilling Ditch, 72.
- SWILLING, JOHN W.**—Organizes party for settlement in Salt River Valley and organizes Swilling Irrigating Canal Company, 71; one of organizers of Phoenix Ditch Co., 86; attempts to have town of Phoenix located at Mill City, 101; description of ranch and home by Edward Irvine, 120.
- SWILLING PARTY**—Personnel of, 71; description and anecdotes of, 73 et seq.
- TAYLOR, CHRIS**—Mention of, 208.
- TAYLOR, JOHN L.**—Member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- TEMPE**—Location of, 103; history of, 108 et seq.
- THANKSGIVING DAY**—Celebration in Phoenix, in 1875, 189.
- THIBODO, Dr. O. J.**—Agent for Darrell Duppa, 75; one of first physicians in Phoenix, 195, 196.
- THOMAS, GENL. EARL D.**—Reminiscences of early Phoenix, 223, 224.
- TIMBER**—Mention of, 117; mentioned by Surveyor General John Wasson in report, 313.
- TIPPETT, HENRY**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- TITUS, JOHN**—Succeeds Wm. F. Turner as Chief Justice of Territory, 136.
- TOMLINSON, JAMES A.**—Post trader at Camp McDowell, and correspondent for "Arizona Miner," 215, 216.
- TRUMAN, MAJ. BEN. C.**—Accompanies Genl. James E. Busling to Arizona, 1; reminiscences, officially names Phoenix and Florence, 112 et seq.
- TUCSON**—Description of by Genl. Busling, 11 et seq.
- TURNER, WM. F.**—Chief Justice of Territory succeeded by Judge Titus, 136.
- TWEED, JUDGE CHARLES A.**—Presides over first District Court in Maricopa County, 136; biography of, 136.
- TWOMEY, DANIEL**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97; Mike Connell's attempt to kill; Twomey's life saved by McGoldrick, 82.
- UNDERWOOD, JOHN**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- VADER, JAMES**—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- VANDERMARK, LODOVIC**—Member of Swilling Party, 72.
- VAN WARREN & McCARTY**—Early hotelkeepers in Phoenix, 189.
- VIRGINIA DITCH CO.**—Notice of appropriation of water from Salt River, 89.
- VULTURE MINE**—Description of by Genl. Busling, 24 et seq.
- WALKER, JOHN**—Starts settlement of St. Johns, 275, 276.
- WALKER, JOHN D.**—Mention of, 54.

- WALTERS, P. L. (JACK)—Member of Swilling Party, 72; death and funeral of, 84; with Johnny George erects fine building in Phoenix, 197; biography of, 198.
- WARE & FORD—Early blacksmiths in Phoenix, 179, 215.
- WASSON, JOHN—One of organizers of Salt River Ditch Co., 87; appointed Surveyor-General of Territory, 308; biography of, 308; report of, 309 et seq.
- WASSON, JOSEPH—Mention of, 175.
- WATSON, KINSEY—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- WELL—First large well in Phoenix sunk by J. D. Monihon, 201.
- WERTHEIMER, AARON—Partner of Michael Wormser, 198, 199; Death of, 199.
- WHEAT, GRANVILLE—Pioneer of Florence and vicinity, 55.
- WHITE, ANDREW—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- WHITE, CHAPLAIN—Of Camp Verde, holds services in Prescott, 236, 237.
- WHITLOW, CHARLES—First postmaster of Maryville, 234.
- WHITLOW, MOLLIE—Mention of, 234.
- WHITLOW, SIERRA NEVADA—Mention of, 234.
- WICKENBURG—Described by Genl. Rusling, 24 et seq.
- WICKENBURG, HENRY—Stockholder in Swilling Irrigating Canal Co., 71.
- WILLIAMS, GEORGE W.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- WILLIAMS, THOMAS—Does plastering on first school building in Phoenix, 246.
- WILLIAMSON VALLEY—Described by Genl. Rusling, 41.
- WILSON, GORDON A.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97; member of Sixth Territorial Legislature, 124.
- WILSON, J. M.—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88.
- WILSON, T. J.—Mention of, 234.
- WINTERS, E. H.—Mention of, 201.
- WISS, JOHN H.—One of organizers of Prescott Ditch Co., 88.
- WOODCOCK, C. P.—One of organizers of Virginia Ditch Co., 89.
- WOODS, JOSEPH—Member of Swilling Party, 72.
- WOOLSEY, KING S.—Early owner of property in Phoenix, 183.
- WORDEN, THOMAS C.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 97.
- WORMSER & WERTHEIMER—Early merchants of Phoenix, 198, 199; contribute building material for first school building in Phoenix, 246.
- WORMSER, MICHAEL—Early resident of Salt River Valley, 152; partner of Aaron Wertheimer, 198, 199; story of, 199.
- YERKES, EDWIN A.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 98.
- YOUNG, J. A.—One of organizers of Salt River Farming Ditch Co., 90.
- YOUNG, JAMES A.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 98; appointed Justice of Peace of Maricopa County, 133.
- YOUNG, JOHN A.—Follows Swilling Party into Salt River Valley, 98; elected Justice of Peace, 123.





don

77

9 10 11

Stanford University Libraries  
3 6105 010 360 431

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES  
STANFORD AUXILIARY LIBRARY  
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004  
(415) 723-9201  
All books may be recalled after 7 days

JUL

DATE DUE

280 JUL 22 1997

1997

